

AUGUSTA COUNTY

HISTORICAL SOCIETY



HISTORICAL BULLETIN



Notice to Hunters and Trappers !

I am now in position, more than ever before, to pay you the highest cash prices for all kinds of FURTS with the most liberal assortment. Am also in the market at all times for green and dry hides, scrap iron, rubber, brass and all kinds of junk.

SEE ME BEFORE SELLING.




AMOS KLOTZ,

202 S. Lewis St., Staunton, Va.

PHONE 638.

Skunks, Foxes, Lynx, Possums, Muskrats and Otter.





Presidents of the Augusta County Historical Society

*Dr. Richard P. Bell, 1964-1966
*Harry Lee Nash, Jr., 1966-1967
*Dr. Marshall M. Brice, 1967-1968
*Dr. James Sprunt, 1968-1970
*Richard M. Hamrick, Jr., 1970-1972
+Joseph B. Yount III, 1972-1974
*Mrs. William Bushman, 1974-1976
*John M. Dunlap, Jr., 1976-1977
Miss Mary Kathryn Blackwell, 1977-1979
Mrs. Harry D. Hevener, 1979-1981
John M. McChesney, Jr., 1981-1983
Mrs. John E. True, 1983-1985
Edgar R. Coiner, 1985-1987
Charles R. Chittum, 1987-1989
*Mrs. William B. Patterson, 1989-1991
*R. Fontaine McPherson, Jr., 1991-1993
Dr. James B. Patrick, 1993-1995
Dr. Ann McCleary, 1995-1997
Dr. Katharine L. Brown, 1997-1999
Nancy T. Sorrells, 2000-2001
Mary Beirne Nutt, 2002-2003
Dr. Kenneth Keller, 2004-2005
Linda Petzke, 2006-2007
Dr. Katharine L. Brown, 2008-2011
Nancy T. Sorrells, 2012-2013
Linda Petzke, 2014-

*Charter Member of Society
+Honorary Charter Member

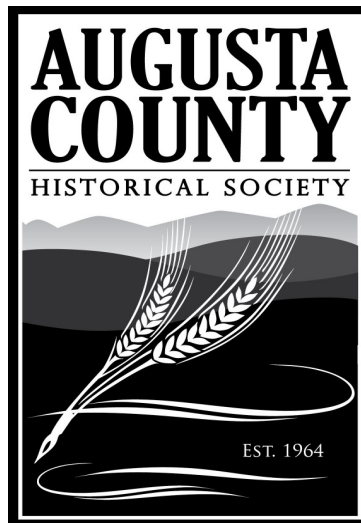


Augusta Historical Bulletin

Published by the
AUGUSTA COUNTY HISTORICAL SOCIETY

Founded 1964

Post Office Box 686
Staunton, Virginia 24402-0686
www.augustacountyhs.org



VOLUME 50

2014



Copyright 2014 by the Augusta County Historical Society
ISSN: 0571-8899 *Copies of this annual issue go to all members*
550 copies printed by Mid Valley Press
Verona, Virginia

A purpose of the Augusta County Historical Society is to publish the *Augusta Historical Bulletin* which is to be sent without charge to all members.

The membership of the society is composed of members who pay the following dues:

Membership renewal notices are sent out based on the month in which you joined the society.

Annual (individual).....	\$35
Annual (family).....	\$50
Annual Institutional.....	\$35

NOTICE

It is urgent that the society be promptly notified of changes of address. Bulletins which cannot be delivered by the postal service will not be forwarded due to high postage rates.

Augusta County Historical Society
P.O. Box 686
Staunton, VA 24402-0686
540-248-4151
www.augustacountyhs.org

Augusta County Historical Society office and research library are located on the third floor of the R.R. Smith Center for History and Art at 20 South New Street, Staunton, VA 24401. A parking garage is located across the street.

Cover design by Jennifer Wood Monroe.



Contents

The Life of Kenton Harper of Virginia: Editor, Citizen, and Soldier
By Thomas Tabb Jeffries III.....Page 1

Swannanoa: Summer Home of James and Sallie Dooley, 1913-1925
By Dale Cyrus Wheary..... Page 19

A History of Political Cartoons and the Career of Jim McCloskey
By Matt Darroch.....Page 35

Augusta County Historical Society turns Fifty
Written and compiled by Nancy Sorrells....Page 53

General Philip Sheridan's Commentary on the Battle of
Waynesboro and the End of the Valley Campaign in 1865
By Daniel A. Métraux.....Page 69

Booker T. Washington High School, Staunton, Va.
By Nancy T. Sorrells (historical description) and
Frazier Associates (architectural description).....Page 76

Jewish Merchants of Downtown Staunton
By Ruth Chodrow and Karen Lynne Johnston.....Page 91

Letters from AMA: John Alvin Taylor, Jr., 1941-1942
Transcriptions, editorial comments by Nancy Sorrells.. Page 114

The John Lewis Homesite and Commemoratives
By Richard H. Dilworth, Sr.Page 143

Fifty-seven quilts from four generations
By J.B. Yount III.....Page 155

Books on Local and Virginia history (By Daniel A. Métraux except as noted)
1) (Reviewed by J. Susanne Simmons) Turk McCleskey, *The Road to Black Ned's Forge: A Story of Race, Sex and Trade on the Colonial American Frontier*.....Page 166
2) (Reviewed by Ralph H. Ruedy) Lucia Stanton, *"Those Who Labor for my Happiness": Slavery at Thomas Jefferson's Monticello*.....Page 168
3) Thomas Tabb Jeffries, III, *Kenton Harper of Virginia: Editor, Citizen, Soldier*.....Page 170



4) Nancy T. Sorrells, <i>Augusta County: Images of America</i>	Page 172
5) Alan Taylor, <i>The Internal Enemy: Slavery and War in Virginia 1772-1832</i>	Page 173
6) Mary E. Lyons, <i>The Blue Ridge Tunnel: A Remarkable Engineering Feat in Antebellum Virginia</i>	Page 175
7) Richard A. Straw, <i>Rockbridge County: The Michael Miley Collection</i>	Page 176
8) Richard G. Williams, Jr., <i>The Battle of Waynesboro</i>	Page 177
9) Charles Culbertson, <i>Historic Tales & Anthology</i>	Page 178
10) Rex Bowman and Carlos Santos, <i>Rot, Riot and Rebellion: Mr. Jefferson's Struggle to Save the University</i>	Page 179
11) Richard G. Williams, Jr., <i>Lexington, Virginia and the Civil War</i>	Page 181
12) Lynn Coffey, <i>Appalachian Heart: Oral Histories of the Mountain Elders</i>	Page 183
13) A. Scott Berg, <i>Wilson</i>	Page 185
14) Rodney Barfield, <i>America's Forgotten Caste: Free Blacks in Antebellum Virginia and North Carolina</i>	Page 186
15) John R. Hildebrand, <i>A Mennonite Journal 1862-1865: A Father's Account of the Civil War in the Shenandoah Valley</i>	Page 188
Books on General American History	
16) Joseph J. Ellis, <i>Revolutionary Summer: The Birth of American Independence</i>	Page 189
17) Michael Golay, <i>America 1933: The Great Depression, Lorena Hickok, Eleanor Roosevelt, and the Shaping of the New Deal</i>	Page 190
18) Natalie Dykstra, <i>Clover Adams</i>	Page 192
19) Nathaniel Philbrick, <i>Custer, Sitting Bull Little Bighorn</i> ..	Page 194
20) Doris Kearns Goodwin, <i>The Bully Pulpit: Theodore Roosevelt, William Howard Taft and the Golden Age of Journalism</i>	Page 195
21) Earle Labor, <i>Jack London: An American Life</i>	Page 196
22) Nathaniel Philbrick, <i>Bunker Hill: City, Siege, Revolution</i> ..	Page 198
23) John Matteson, <i>The Lives of Margaret Fuller</i>	Page 199

Recent Acquisitions of the Augusta County Historical Society.....Page 201

Index.....Page 209

ACHS officers.....Page 219

Family Heritage Program.....Page 220



Augusta Historical Bulletin: Editorial Policy

The editors of the *Augusta Historical Bulletin* welcome submissions relating to any topic or period in the history of Augusta County, Virginia, and its wider environs. Submissions may take the form of articles, research notes, edited documents, or indexes to historical documents. Other formats might be acceptable, but prospective authors of such submissions are encouraged to consult with a member of the editorial board. With rare exceptions, the *Bulletin* does not publish manuscripts that focus exclusively on genealogical matters. Authors should strive to make their contributions accessible to a broad readership. In matters of form and style, authors should adhere to the guidelines and strictures set forth in the *Chicago Manual of Style*, 15th ed., or Kate L. Turabian, et al., *A Manual for Writers of Term Papers, Theses, and Dissertations*, 6th ed., both of which are widely available in libraries and bookstores. A style sheet, prepared by the editors of the *Bulletin*, is available upon request. A potential author should submit electronically a double-spaced Microsoft Word document of his or her proposed manuscript, with endnotes. Although images can be included in the the Word document, upon final acceptance authors will be required to submit high resolution jpg or tiff images (300 dpi).

Hard copy manuscripts or requests for style sheets should be sent to: The Augusta County Historical Society, Attention: Bulletin Editors, P.O. Box 686, Staunton, Virginia 24402-0686. Please try to submit proposed manuscripts by June 1, 2015. Queries and electronic submission may also be sent to: Nancy Sorrells (lotswife@comcast.net) or Katharine Brown (klbrown@cfw.com).





The Life of Kenton Harper of Virginia: Editor, Citizen, and Soldier

By Thomas Tabb Jeffries III

Editor's Note: This article is based on a lecture that Thomas Tabb Jeffries, III presented on his recent book, Kenton Harper of Virginia: Editor, Citizen, Soldier, on 23 January 2014 as a Stuart Talk at the R.R. Smith Center for History and Art on behalf of the ACHS. Jeffries published the book for the Augusta County Historical Society.

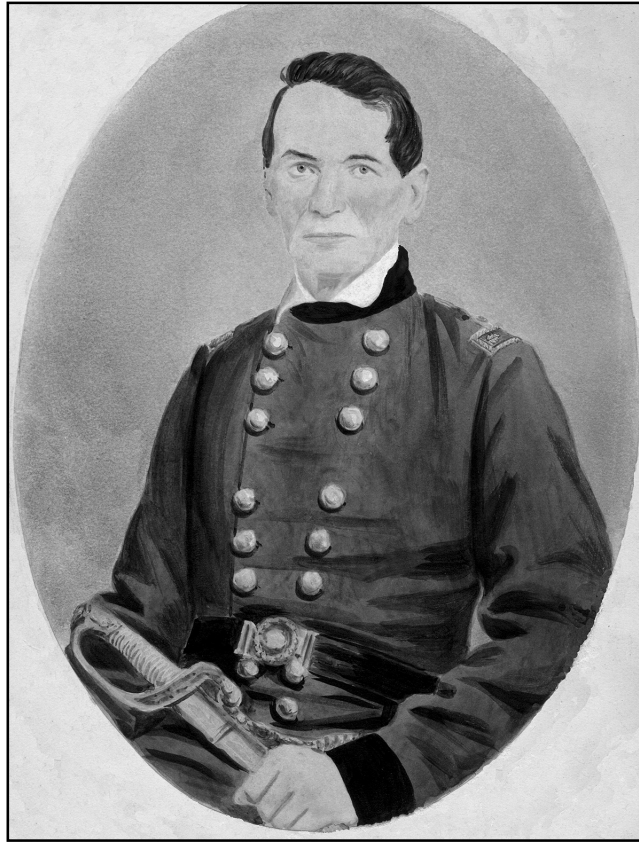
Introduction

Imagine August, 1861...in northern Virginia at least, rain fell almost constantly. Over several hot days the previous month, two American armies fought each other along the banks of a small stream called Bull Run....the first major battle of what most participants anticipated to be a short war. Soldiers of General Thomas Jackson's 1st Brigade, now camped near Centreville, basked in the glory of their recent victory while still tending to their wounded and burying their dead.

Sixty-one-year-old Colonel Kenton Harper (1801-1867), the second oldest officer on that Bull Run field, sat in his tent contemplating a decision he dreaded. During the battle, he had led Virginia's 5th Infantry Regiment that fought to protect Jackson's right flank. On August 29, Harper received devastating news. Eleanor, his wife of thirty-seven years, was near death in Staunton. He immediately applied to Jackson for a furlough to rush home to be at her side. Jackson, later known to refuse such requests, was apparently in a compassionate mood. He wrote approved on the back of Harper's note. Then, following protocol, he forwarded it up the chain of command. General Joseph Johnston, however, was not as sympathetic and denied the request.

A distraught Harper faced a dilemma. His entire life had been one of loyalty and duty, but now he felt compelled to return home. Reluctantly he picked up his pen and scribbled a note resigning from the army. Johnston once again denied his request, but this time sent it on to Richmond, where it was subsequently approved. Harper gathered his belongings and hurried back to Staunton. Sadly, he arrived too late....just in time for his wife's funeral.

So, just who was Kenton Harper, and how did he come to this



Kenton Harper

point in his life? My personal process of answering these questions began about ten years ago. My father's mother was a grand-daughter of Kenton Harper, so I have a personal connection to this man. Going through some of my father's papers, I came across a copy of Kenton Harper's obituary. It described him as one of western Virginia's most influential nineteenth-century newspaper editors. The obituary revealed that Harper led a company of soldiers in the Mexican-American War, became an Indian Agent in the wild Indian Territory, led Virginia's militia that captured the U.S. Armory at Harpers Ferry, fought beside Stonewall Jackson at the First Battle of Manassas, and then led a reserve regiment into battle when Staunton was threatened.

After reading of these accomplishments, I decided to learn more about this interesting man. At that point, though, the idea of writing a book would have seemed far-fetched. I corresponded with Katharine Brown, then president of the ACHS, to see what the society archives could add to my research. In a 2005 email, Katharine wrote: "It has



always amazed me what an interesting bunch of men and women were active in Staunton prior to the Civil War, and yet how very little has been published about them." The tipping point, as far as a possible book was concerned, came when I discovered the UNC had microfilm copies of a large collection of Kenton Harper's personal papers. I then found that the originals of these, and many more, were in the possession of Kenton Harper's great-great-grandson, Charlie Harper of Richmond.

Kenton Harper's life can be divided into several chapters: Newspaper editor, Politician, Indian Agent, and Citizen-soldier. My purpose here is a brief outline of his life and career.

Kenton Harper was born into a newspaper family in Chambersburg, Pennsylvania during the second year of the nineteenth century. Sometime earlier, his family arrived with their Scots-Irish heritage from the Philadelphia area. His father, George Kenton Harper, became sole editor and proprietor of the *Franklin Repository* newspaper in 1800.

When Kenton Harper was eleven years old, he experienced some of the hardship of war. His father left home to fight the British in the Canadian wilderness. Soon after returning, although exempt from further military service, Second Lieutenant Harper left his family again to help save Baltimore when the British invaded up the Chesapeake. As a Federalist, his father had taken a strong editorial stand against another war with Britain. But when war came, he did not hesitate to set aside his personal political views to defend his country. By his father's actions, Kenton Harper inherited a life-long commitment to loyalty and public service.

Little is known of Harper's education, but his future writings indicate a well-educated mind. Having learned the newspaper business apprenticing with his father, at the age of twenty-two, Kenton Harper was ready to find his own way in the world. Setting out alone up the Shenandoah Valley in 1823, he ventured as far as Staunton, Virginia. Following in the footsteps of earlier Scots-Irish, who migrated up the Great Valley, his heritage would have made him feel at home in his new community.

After arriving, Harper quickly associated himself with Isaac Collett's *Republican Farmer* newspaper. This paper, established by Collett in 1809, was the latest in a line of Staunton newspapers that began when the *Staunton Gazette* first appeared as early as 1790. Within a year, Harper became the sole editor and proprietor of this newspaper, which he re-



named *The Staunton Spectator and General Advertiser*. He initially published his four-page paper every Friday for an annual subscription rate of two dollars.

During the first half of the nineteenth century, as the country's population expanded into rural areas such as western Virginia and literacy increased, the demand for news grew dramatically. In 1800 there were an estimated 234 newspapers in the nation, by 1833, the twenty-four states boasted at least 1,200. At the time, of course, newspapers were the ONLY means to disseminate information widely.

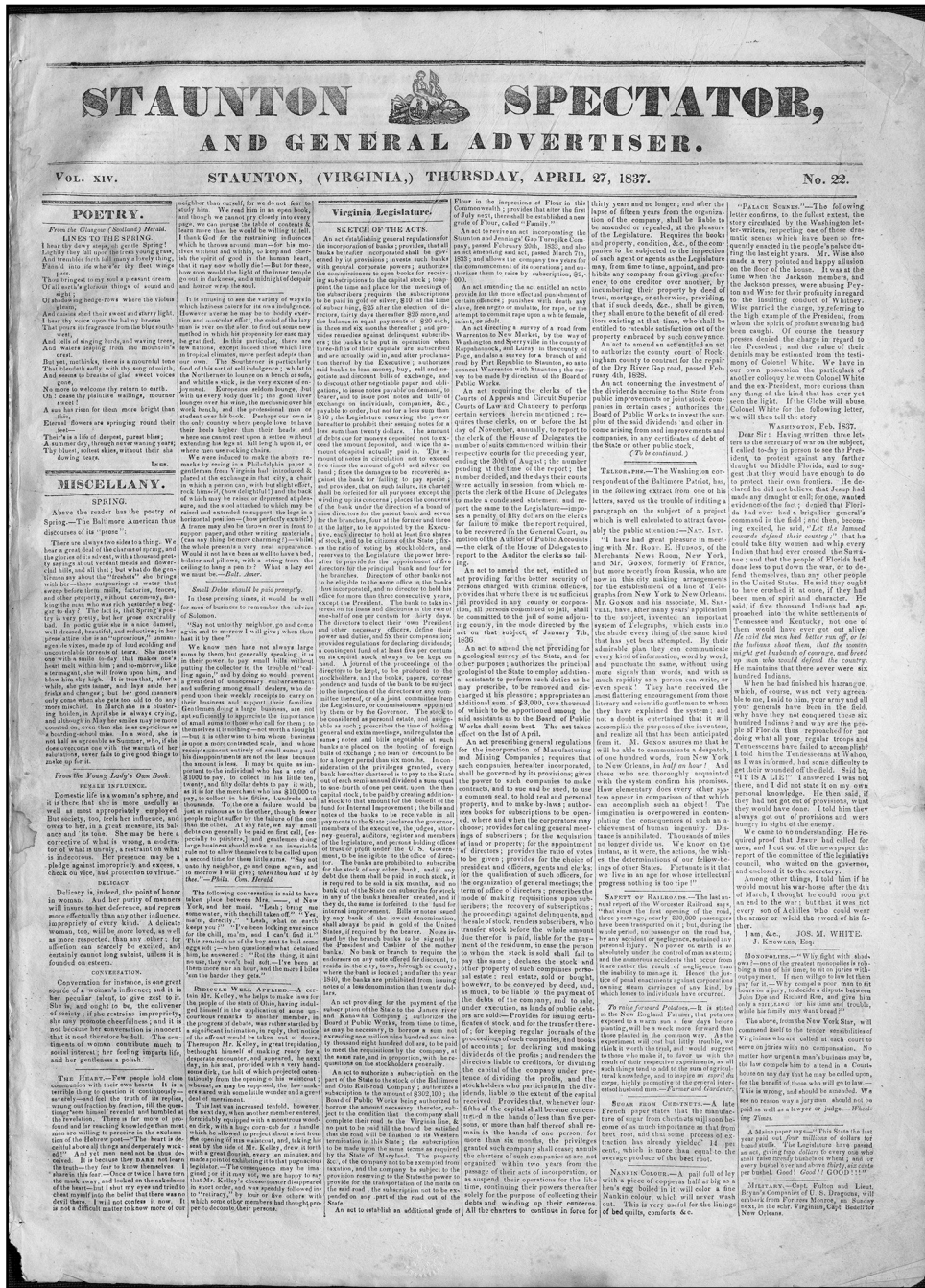
When Harper arrived, Staunton's population numbered about 1,400. The town was rapidly expanding its role as the economic and political center for Augusta County's 17,000 citizens. This growth demanded a reliable newspaper, in the hands of a respected editor. Kenton Harper eventually rose to become the Valley's and one of Virginia's most influential editors.

Publishing a regular newspaper, even a weekly one, was not an easy task. At first, Harper worked alone, setting his type by hand, printing one paper at a time. Simply acquiring the information needed to fill the weekly pages was time-consuming. Unlike big city papers, Harper had no staff of reporters to gather news. He had to do it all himself.

Publishing a country newspaper was a precarious financial venture. One of Harper's contemporary editors observed:

Perhaps it may not be amiss to remember the Printer in many discourses. His paper, his ink, his presses and his types, his labor and his living, all must be punctually paid for. You and your wives and your children and your neighbors have been amused and informed, and I hope improved by it, but, have you ever complied with conditions of subscription? Have you ever taken as much pains to furnish the printer with his money as he has to furnish you with your paper? If you have not, go pay him off, and sin no more.

Three significant events occurred after Harper established his newspaper. First, during 1824, he traveled back to Chambersburg and married the girl he left behind, Eleanor Colhoun, on Christmas day. He and Ellen (as she was called) eventually raised five children and became welcome members of Staunton society. Second, in 1827 Harper began an important life-long relationship with Alexander Hugh Holmes Stuart, who had just returned home from the University of Virginia law school to establish himself as a Staunton lawyer. Stuart later rose to political prominence in Virginia and on the national stage. Harper always



An 1837 front page from the Staunton Spectator and General Advertiser that Harper published.



considered Stuart his closest friend. Then in 1829 Harper acquired a farm of approximately two hundred acres, nine miles north of Staunton near Fort Defiance, that he named “Glen Allen.” This served as his favorite refuge for the rest of his life.

Politics

The proliferation of newspapers correlated directly to the growth of American political parties. Newspapers allowed people in distant regions, who would never meet, to unite behind common political beliefs. Nineteenth-century newspaper editors often associated their papers with one political party or another, and Harper was no exception.

The 1830s witnessed a major re-alignment of the political landscape. Many National Republicans, disturbed by the policies of Andrew Jackson, looked for a new political home. Henry Clay stepped forward to help organize what became the Whig Party. His “American System,” stressing economic growth through protective tariffs, a strong central bank, and federally-funded improvements of the nation’s railroads, canals, and interstate roads, became the party’s mantra.

Kenton Harper recognized the potential economic benefits of Clay’s policies for western Virginia and quickly aligned his newspaper with the Whig Party. By 1842, as one of Virginia’s twenty-six Whig papers, Harper through his *Staunton Spectator* was one of the state’s strongest voices for all things Whig, especially railroads and turnpikes that exposed Valley products to new markets.

Harper and his *Spectator* were instrumental in keeping Augusta County consistently in the Whig column during local and national elections from the 1830s through the mid-1850s. During the 1836 and 1840 presidential contests, Harper actively supported William Henry Harrison, hero of the battle of Tippecanoe, against Democrat Martin Van Buren. During the 1836 campaign, he even published a twenty-five issue, four-page supplement titled the *Harrison Advocate*. Although Virginia’s twenty-three electoral votes went to Van Buren in both elections, Harrison became the first Whig president, although briefly, in 1841.

Kenton Harper was elected, as a Whig, to represent his District at Virginia’s 1837 session of the General Assembly. This was the only time Harper served in a higher political capacity. He did later run for the Confederate Congress in 1861, but was defeated by his friend John Brown Baldwin, in a particularly nasty election.



War with Mexico

Ever since colonial times, Americans coveted the vast, unexplored lands to their west. John Adams in 1811 said: "The whole continent of North America appears to be destined by Divine Providence to be peopled by one nation, speaking one language, professing one general system of religious and political principles, and accustomed to one general tenor of social usages and customs." Thomas Jefferson accomplished much of this with the Louisiana Purchase, but it fell to the dogged determination of President James K. Polk, to fulfill the nation's manifest destiny.

With Texas in the fold as the twenty-eighth state in 1845, there remained a strip of land between the Rio Grande and Nueces rivers, which was traditionally part of Mexico, but claimed by the United States. After sending Zachary Taylor with 3,500 troops into the area, a minor skirmish near Matamoros gave Polk just the excuse he needed. Citing the dubious claim of, "American blood spilled on American soil," he coerced Congress to declare war on Mexico. Following several Taylor victories in northern Mexico, Polk sent an invasion force led by General Winfield Scott to strike into the heart of Mexico after landing at Vera Cruz.

With the invasion underway, in November, 1846, the Secretary of War issued a call for nine additional volunteer regiments. Virginia responded with the formation of the 1st Virginia Volunteer Infantry Regiment comprised of ten companies from across the state. Augusta County responded by raising one of the ten companies, known as the Augusta Volunteers. The county was the home of several well-organized militia companies and war fever was running high. Recruiting went smoothly with eighty-one men, all harboring visions of glory in an exotic land, signed up. They ranged in age from seventeen to forty-five. Most were young and inexperienced farmers and laborers. The company also included five carpenters, two blacksmiths, and a baker born in Philadelphia. But who would lead these young men?

At a December 7 meeting, the Augusta Volunteers recognized that success depended on finding an older, father-figure, as their leader. Staunton's highly-respected newspaper editor, forty-six-year-old Kenton Harper, was just their man. Harper, like every able-bodied white male citizen between the ages of eighteen and forty-five, was required by law to arm himself with a musket or rifle and join a local militia company. For many years he served as captain of the Staunton Militia Company. But, as a staunch Whig, Harper strongly denounced Mr. Polk's war, seen by most in his party as an ill-advised, even unconstitutional, ven-



ture. However, like his father before him, who was against a second war with Britain, but had served when the British threatened his country, Kenton Harper quickly accepted.

Even though there was no real threat to his country, Harper's loyalty to his community trumped his personal political views. A Staunton friend, John Howe Peyton, skeptically told his sisters, "Harper is to command the new company and it is said he is anxious to go to Mexico. His health is very bad, and he thinks service in Mexico will do him good, besides he is full of fight." In fact, Kenton Harper's fragile health plagued him his entire life, even causing him to relinquish control of his newspaper for part of 1829.

On December 29, a bitter cold Tuesday morning, Augusta's volunteers marched proudly through Staunton. Cheered on by their families and friends, they boarded a train bound for Richmond, where Captain Harper officially presented them to Governor Smith. After boarding the over-crowded steamship *Mayflower* at Fortress Monroe and sailing for thirty, sea-sick ridden, days, the Augustans disembarked at Port Isabel, near the mouth of the Rio Grande River.

From the time the company was recruited, Harper and his men believed they were destined to join Scott's invasion force at Vera Cruz. Then, as one of Harper's men put it, due to their "deadly aim," they would "send many a poor Mexican to his long home." Their aspirations of battlefield laurels were soon dashed. Soon after they arrived, Harper received orders to proceed up the Rio Grande to join General Taylor's army of occupation of northern Mexico.

For the next nineteen months Harper and his band of volunteers shuffled between various northern Mexican towns, keeping communication routes open, chasing Comanche raiders and Mexican bandits, and generally maintaining the peace. All the while, constant rumors of approaching Mexican armies kept them on edge. But, they never abandoned hopes of eventually being sent south to participate in the real fighting. Mexico ratified the Treaty of Guadalupe Hidalgo, ending hostilities, in February 1848.

Although Harper's company participated in no major battles, they endured much hardship and suffered the loss of a number of their friends. Twenty Augustans returned home early with medical discharges, ten died in Mexico—eight of disease and two at the hands of Mexicans. Fifty-eight returned safely home at the end of the war. Nevertheless, Augusta County and Staunton welcomed their soldiers back as true heroes. A grand dinner celebrated their sacrifices and patriotic devotion in "defending the honor of the Country."



Dr. Lyttleton Waddell acknowledged the high regard for which Captain Harper was held by his company:

Especially were you fortunate and wise in your selection of a leader. You thought you knew him then – now you are sure of it. You know that he has watched over you with a Father's care, - has cheered you when desponding, counseled you when perplexed, administered to you when suffering and sick – and when any died; as is mournfully true, he has buried them in a soldier's grave, mingling his tears with yours.

In an emotional response, Harper acknowledged:

We confidently believed that our destination was the line of operations against the capitol of Mexico.... We were sadly disappointed. Another service assigned us, which, while it involved all the hardship and privation of a soldier's life, had but few of its compensating excitements. If we bring back to you no laurels, we bring to you no reproach, for proudly and confidently can I say, that wherever the name VIRGINIA has been heard – it stands associated with the humane, the gallant and soldierly bearing of her sons.

Despite Harper's disappointing involvement in the war, President Polk achieved his goals and entered history as the man who changed the face of America. Mexico was forced to concede not only the disputed territory north of the Rio Grande, but also California and most of the New Mexico territory—today's Arizona, New Mexico, Utah, Nevada and part of western Colorado.

The Mexican-American War was the first to regularly employ war correspondents. One of Harper's lieutenants, Vincent Geiger, was editor of the *Augusta Democrat* newspaper before signing up. Thus, Augusta County boasted two newspaper editors who reported the experience of its soldiers in letters home. Many of these were reproduced in Staunton's two rival newspapers.

One hundred of Harper's letters to his wife have survived and form much of the basis of chapters in my book that document the story of the Augusta Volunteers. For Kenton Harper, and nearly all of the prominent officers on both sides of the great American conflict a decade later, the Mexican War provided a valuable dress rehearsal.

Indian Agency

The year after returning from Mexico, Kenton Harper sold the newspaper he had nurtured for so long to Joseph Waddell for \$5,000 (about



\$130,000 in today's currency) and retired to his farm, Glen Allen. Before long, an event occurred in Washington that interrupted his quiet retirement. In 1850, President Millard Fillmore appointed Alexander Hugh Holmes Stuart as Secretary of the Interior. One of Stuart's first orders of business was to reform the Indian Agencies that were rife with corruption. He sought out men of unquestioned character to replace many of the existing agents.

In March 1851, Stuart persuaded his friend Kenton Harper to accept the position of Agent for the Chickasaw Nation in the Indian Territory (today's Oklahoma). Stuart promised comfortable housing close to Fort Washita, readily available servants since the Chickasaws held numerous black slaves, financial rewards, and a climate that would benefit Harper's health.

When the Chickasaws were relocated west of the Mississippi from Alabama, as part of Andrew Jackson's Indian removal program, they were given a portion of land carved out of the Choctaw allotment. Chickasaws were indignant at being governed by the Choctaw-controlled governing council.

Harper's oldest son, George Kenton Harper with his wife and infant son, accompanied Harper on the long journey west. George had obtained a permit to conduct a trading operation at Fort Washita. The Indian Territory, when Harper and his family arrived at Fort Washita after a 1,500-mile journey, was anything but safe or settled. Comanche and Kiowa bands raided with impunity nearby and the huge Buffalo herds, some with a million or more of the beasts, had yet to suffer the hunters who would arrive with the railroads. And the agency, sadly, was not at all like Stuart had described. The previous agent had run it in a slipshod manner, Traders were allowed to cheat the Indians, the small agency cabin was in dire need of repairs, the promised garden had gone to seed, and Chickasaw discontent continued to increase.

Making matters worse, George Harper's trading venture soon failed. Kenton Harper struggled to improve the agency and his living conditions while working to satisfy the Chickasaw desire to establish their own government on land separate from the Choctaws. Writing to Stuart in September, 1851, Harper lamented, "There is no inducement for me to remain a day longer than can be satisfied I may be of service to the Chickasaws. If there is no reasonable prospect of securing important benefit to them, I shall remain, at least, until the end of the year. I regret now, most sincerely, that I did not decline the appointment." But true to



The Indian Agent's cabin at Fort Washita

his character, Harper avowed, "I am ambitious, however, now that I am here, to do my duty."

Following his resignation in June 1852, Harper joined Stuart in Washington as his chief clerk. As the U.S. Government representative, he negotiated the Treaty of 1852 with a delegation of his Chickasaw friends. This treaty did not completely sever the Chickasaws from the Choctaws, but did pave the way for a subsequent treaty that completed their independence in 1855. When the next president, Franklin Pierce, and his Democratic party took office in March 1853, Whigs Stuart and Harper lost their jobs and quietly departed for Staunton.

Harper retired again to his farm, Glen Allen. Of his retirement, the *Spectator* noted that "Capt. H. is entering quite extensively into the manufacture of wines from the Isabella and Catawba Grapes, and bids fair to be eminently successful." But once again, Harper's retirement would be interrupted by military necessity.

Secession

During most of the next decade, the country witnessed an ever accelerating journey toward disunion. The vast territory acquired from



Mexico came with a high price. Almost immediately, the nation split along sectional lines over whether new states carved out of the largess would enter as free or slave states. Harper's Whig party soon deteriorated as its northern and southern wings went their separate ways over slavery differences.

Kenton Harper's own record regarding slavery is somewhat sketchy. Although he hailed from Pennsylvania, where slavery was all but eradicated by 1824, he adopted at least some of the prevailing racial practices and prejudices of his new community. We know, for instance, that by 1850 he owned as many as ten slaves. However, during Virginia's Slavery debates of 1829 and 1830, Harper helped draft a memorial to Virginia's General Assembly declaring slavery "an evil greater than the aggregate of all other evils which beset us." The "evil" Harper described was not so much due the impact on those enslaved, but the impact on the white community; "We believe that the public morals and general prosperity...are deplorably injured by slavery...and that the management of slaves form a source of endless vexation and misery within the house and waste and ruin on the farm."

Harper proposed a process of gradual emancipation that would end slavery in the Commonwealth within several decades. Harper's proposal, however, carried impractical caveats. There must also be a process for removing freed slaves from the state, and slaveowners must be compensated for their losses. At this early date Harper was rapidly becoming one of Virginia's staunchest pro-Union editors. He believed that "If Virginia should wisely determine to rid itself of this evil, the act would scarcely be more beneficial to her own prosperity, than to the interests of the Union." He regarded this possibility as "the first breaking of the dark cloud which now shadows the prospects of our country." And, if Virginia succeeded, he envisioned other states might be expected to follow.

Following the abolitionist John Brown's failure to foment a slave revolt at Harpers Ferry during the summer of 1859, Harper chaired a meeting in Staunton to address the community's fear of future revolts. Echoing President Polk's words over two decades earlier, he recognized the "wanton spilling of Virginia blood upon Virginia soil," and stated "it is imperative duty of the people to arm and prepare for the public defense." Of Harper's "somber" address, the *Republican Vindicator* newspaper, declared alarmingly, "We are particularly struck by the speech of this gallant Whig veteran...When such men and patriots as Kenton Harper express such views, the emergency must indeed be imminent."



Harper's former *Spectator* changed hands again in early 1860 with Richard Mauzy as its new editor who avowed to "maintain the paper's reputation as a bastion of Unionism in keeping with its founding editor, Kenton Harper." And the paper remained optimistic: "With the exception of the insignificant faction of ultra-abolitionists at the North and a few equally insane gentlemen of the fire-eating stripe at the South, nobody seems disposed at the present to tolerate dissolution...."

But, just to be safe, Augusta County accelerated its military preparedness. John Imboden formed the Staunton Artillery and acquired two bronze cannons, and local militia companies increased their drills. Kenton Harper's own military service resumed in January 1860 when Governor John Letcher commissioned him captain of the Light Infantry Company in the 32nd Regiment of Virginia's 5th Militia Division. Barely two months later, in recognition of his Mexican War experience, the governor promoted Harper to Major-General for the entire 5th Militia Division which encompassed all counties south of Rockingham to the Tennessee line and from the Blue Ridge to the Ohio River. The *Spectator* bragged, "Capt. Harper has seen military service, and, we have no doubt, is better qualified for the office, than any man living within the bounds of the Division."

Harpers Ferry

Following the Deep South's secession in April 1861, President Lincoln called for 75,000 troops to put the rebellion down, including 7,000 from Virginia. The state immediately began to debate what she should do. As the secession convention wore on, former governor Henry Wise and others, put together a fateful plan. Virginia militia forces would capture the strategic federal armory and arsenal at Harpers Ferry. Before the final vote was taken, the impatient Wise announced to the delegates that his plan had already been implemented. He reportedly declared, "The self-sacrificing Kenton Harper is leading his neighbors and command to all the dangers and risks of taking Harpers Ferry, and the question is: Shall they be doomed, unsupported, to bloody beds?" The vote for secession passed on April 17 and the governor agreed to support Wise's plan.

In Staunton, the streets bustled with enthusiasm. Citizens and soldiers mingled with holiday-like excitement as their men prepared to take a leading role in Virginia's first military action of the war. The governor's telegram had arrived ordering Major General Kenton Harper to proceed immediately to Winchester "and there to take command of the troops on their way to Harpers Ferry."



Despite his long-held belief that the Union should be maintained at all costs, Harper responded again without hesitation. Before fleeing to Pennsylvania, the small federal force guarding the Armory attempted to destroy its arms and machinery, but was only partly successful. The Virginians occupied the town with scarcely a shot being fired.

Harper immediately began removing whatever arms and equipment could be salvaged to Richmond and dealing with the increasing number of well-meaning, but disorganized militia units. Soon they numbered at least 3,000, led by several generals with their bloated staffs. One of Harper's men described the scene:

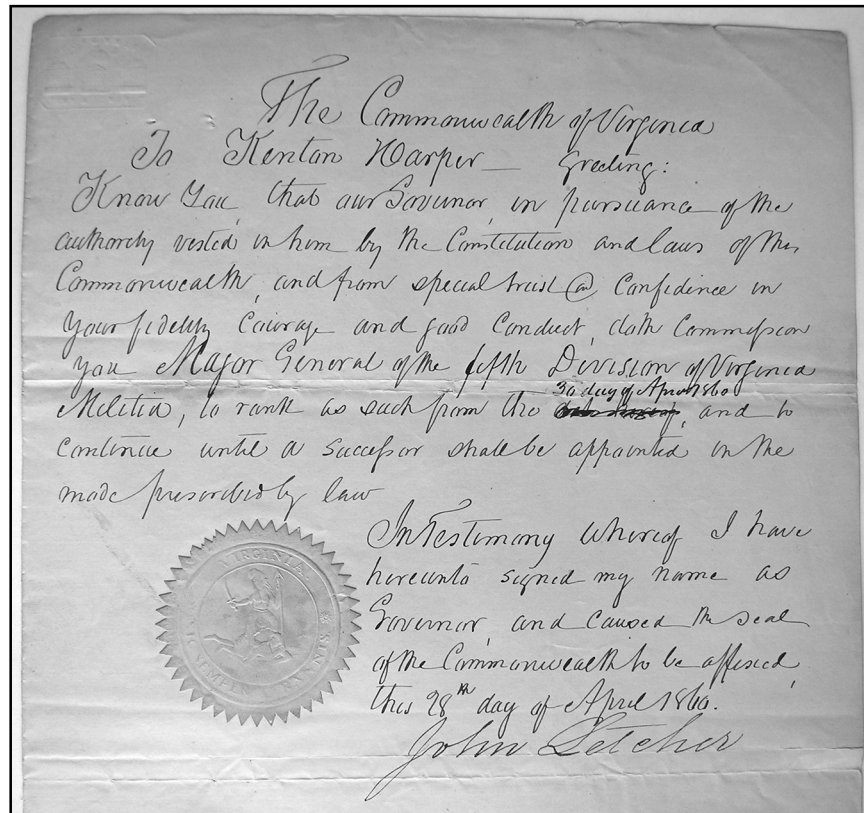
Each of these generals had the regulation staff and as many additional aides, adjutants, and inspectors general as he had friends, who wished to see a little war...each was ornamented according to his taste and ability to acquire. I do not suppose at any time before or since was there ever such a collection of variegated uniform, so much tinsel, so many nodding plumes, so long or so many sashes, cocked hats, jingling spurs and swords, or such resplendent dress as of the first week or two at Harpers Ferry.

Receiving little direction from Richmond, Kenton Harper soon found himself somewhat overwhelmed. At the same time, General Robert E. Lee, now in command of all Confederate forces, decided a regular army officer was needed to sort out the chaos. Thomas J. Jackson arrived from VMI to replace Harper and quickly imposed proper military discipline. In recognition of his contributions and his military experience, Governor Letcher appointed Kenton Harper colonel in command of the 5th Virginia Infantry Regiment.

Before long, General Joseph E. Johnston, an even more senior officer, arrived to replace Jackson, who assumed command of the 1st Brigade that included Harper's 5th Regiment comprising mostly fellow Augustans. By the middle of June, with reports of large Union forces gathering nearby, Johnston realized his exposed position, surrounded by easily occupied hills, was untenable. On June 13, he abandoned Harpers Ferry. After destroying many of the buildings and bridges, he headed for the Shenandoah Valley.

Falling Waters and Bull Run

Following the abandonment of Harpers Ferry, Harper with part of his 5th Regiment guarded the Potomac River crossings between there and Shepherdstown, then joined Johnston's army near Martinsburg. On July 2, Union General Robert Patterson was observed leading an



Kenton Harper's papers granting him an appointment as a major in the General Militia on April 28, 1860.

army across the Potomac into Virginia near Falling Waters to engage Johnston. Johnston selected Harper's regiment to advance toward Patterson. General Jackson, accompanied by one of the Reverend William Pendleton's Rockbridge Artillery four brass cannons, rode along with Harper's men.

Despite orders to avoid a major engagement, Jackson and Harper both were anxious to engage the enemy. Before long, the two forces opposed each other across an open wheat field. Many of the men climbed the fence rails to get a first view of the enemy. Once the shooting began, Jackson and Harper soon found themselves outnumbered and in danger of being flanked. A successful retreat under fire, supported by Pendleton's cannon, resulted in only slight Confederate casualties.

Back near Washington, Union General Irvin McDowell had been cobbling together a force of as many as 30,000 men. While Harper skirmished at Falling Waters, McDowell marched toward Manassas Junction to attack the Confederates there led by General Pierre Beauregard.



Manassas Junction's strategic importance resulted from the railways and major highways that intersected there. Whoever controlled them, controlled the movement of troops and goods from Washington south into Virginia and west into the Shenandoah Valley. Union General-in-Chief, Winfield Scott, had ordered Patterson to keep Johnston's army occupied in the Valley so he could not re-enforce Beauregard. Patterson was unsuccessful; Johnston quietly slipped away and joined Beauregard as McDowell arrived on the scene.

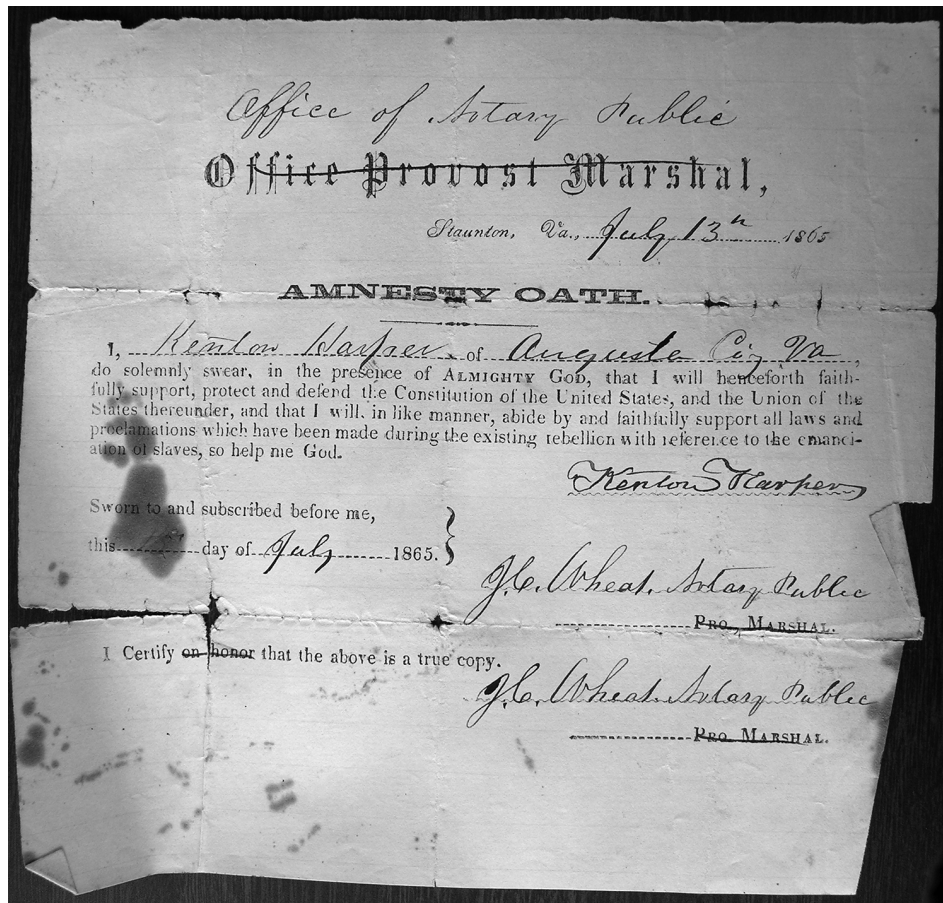
During Sunday, July 21, the main First Manassas battle, centered on Mrs. Henry's Hill, ebbed back and forth as the two armies attacked and counter-attacked. Harper and his 5th Regiment fought bravely throughout the bloody battle. Ultimately the Confederates prevailed. Union forces fled in disarray toward Washington, and General Jackson received the enduring name of "Stonewall." The total casualties for both sides, somewhere around 3,000 killed or wounded, pale compared to the carnage to come, but at the time they seemed horrendous. All thoughts of a quick, glorious war soon evaporated.

Following the death of his wife, Harper remained in Staunton. During the rest of the war he organized various Home Guard and Reserve forces as Staunton was repeatedly threatened and actually occupied by Union troops several times. In June of 1864, he led a regiment of reserves into battle against a large Union force near the village of Piedmont. His men fought bravely, but were eventually routed, with the loss of at least thirteen of his men killed and twenty-seven wounded.

Final Days

Following the war, Harper, and everyone else in Augusta County, struggled to deal with the upheaval in their community as the nation began healing itself. In July 1865, Harper signed the oath of amnesty, swearing to support the Union of States and all laws referring to the emancipation of slaves. The following August, President Andrew Johnson granted Harper a full pardon and amnesty for "all offences by him arising from his participation in the rebellion." Thus, in August 1866, Kenton Harper was officially a civilian after twenty years of nearly continuous military and government service.

Sadly, however, he did not live to see his country truly re-united. After attending a late November 1867 meeting to plan for a new railway following the Valley turnpike that would carry Augusta's produce to markets in Baltimore and Ohio, his fragile health finally failed him.



Kenton Harper's Amnesty Oath, July 13, 1865.

Surrounded by his children on Christmas day, the anniversary of his marriage, he died at the age of sixty-six.

His burial, "adjoining the soldiers section and near his comrades," was in Thornrose, the Staunton cemetery he helped to establish in 1849. The *Spectator* lamented; "Thus has passed from among us another of the marked men of our county; one who has contributed by his private demeanor and his patriotic public spirit to give a still higher tone to the character and reputation of Augusta." The *Staunton Vindicator* commended his "moral courage enabling him ever to pursue the right, he may justly be regarded by those who knew him well as one of a very few in a generation..." The *Norfolk Journal* praised Harper as "a small man in stature, yet a large man in heart..."

We should remember Kenton Harper today as one of the many unheralded figures of the nineteenth century; one who selflessly served



his country and left a lasting impact on his society through the newspaper he founded. In many ways, he embodied the ideals of hard work, self-sacrifice, and public virtue. My book richly describes Kenton Harper's political undertakings and the military activities in which he participated, based on his own reports and letters as well as many other sources. But, it is not just a story of one man's life. My book also illuminates how one town, Staunton, and one county, Augusta, dealt with all the major events that occurred during Harper's lifetime.



Kenton Harper's grave marker in Thornrose Cemetery, Staunton.



Swannanoa: Summer Home of James and Sallie Dooley, 1913-1925

By Dale Cyrus Wheary
Maymont Curator / Director of Historical
Collections and Programs

Editor's note: Swannanoa, the marble mansion that sits atop Afton Mountain on the Augusta-Nelson county lines, has long fascinated local citizens. The early years of the estate, built for James and Sallie Dooley, has been the subject of much misunderstanding. Dale Cyrus Wheary, the curator and director of the Historical Collections and Programs at Maymont in Richmond has spent many years studying the Dooleys and their two homes, Maymont and Swannanoa. In this article, Mrs. Wheary uses her research to illustrate the fact that Swannanoa represents an important expression of the Gilded Age – on a par with the famous ‘cottages’ of Newport, Rhode Island — and as a document of the tastes, the interests, and the aspirations of Richmond financier Dooley and his wife.

For the past thirty-six years, Dale Wheary has served as Director of Historical Collections and Programs and Curator of Maymont, the one hundred-acre Richmond estate of James and Sallie Dooley. Her work has focused on directing the long-term conservation and restoration of the 1893 Maymont Mansion—both upstairs and downstairs—documenting and researching James and Sallie Dooley, their estate, their collection of decorative and fine arts in addition to the Dooleys’ summer home, Swannanoa.

Introduction

The marble mansion on Afton Mountain in Virginia’s beautiful Blue Ridge has had a special allure ever since it was created as the summer home of James Henry Dooley (1841-1922) and Sarah (“Sallie”) O. May Dooley (1846-1925). A Virginia Historic Landmark and a National Register Historic Place since 1969, Swannanoa is recognized for the palatial quality of its Italian-Renaissance-inspired design, its sumptuous detailing, and its importance as a representative of the elaborate estates that proliferated in the United States from the late 1880s through the early



East facade of Swannanoa (Courtesy Maymont Mansion Archives)



Aerial view of Maymont, the Dooleys' home in Richmond. (Courtesy Maymont Historical Collections)



Sallie Dooley

James Dooley

twentieth century.¹ It has long been a special object of study as a primary resource for understanding and interpreting the Dooleys and their one-hundred-acre Richmond estate Maymont. Completed in 1893, the opulent Maymont Mansion, surrounded by picturesque grounds and gardens, was the city's unrivaled showplace of its day. Bequeathed to the city of Richmond by the Dooleys for use as a museum and park, it opened to the public in 1926. Operated since 1975 by the nonprofit Maymont Foundation, Maymont stands today as a remarkably intact, well-preserved expression of the taste of a cultivated couple in the mainstream of their times and a comprehensive document of the dynamic era in which it was created. Drawing upon a sizable body of historical documentation collected for Maymont's curatorial purposes, this overview of Swannanoa's Dooley-era history is presented to expand appreciation of its importance as an architectural treasure and a Virginia example of the design and affluent lifestyle of America's Gilded Age.²

James and Sallie Dooley

While the Dooleys do not figure in U.S. history texts, their stories, interests, and aspirations embody much of the prevailing culture of their time and social position. Born on the plantation of her grandparents in Lunenburg County, Sallie was steeped in the agrarian world of the old South. Lunenburg County was then the heart of the tobacco-growing



region of Southside Virginia and in the years leading up to the Civil War, the seat of ardent secessionist politics. Her father was Dr. Henry May, a physician; her mother Julia Jones died when Sallie was about seven years old. She was descended from prominent old Virginia families, her ancestors including Peter Jones, the founder of Petersburg, Nathaniel Harrison of Brandon Plantation, and Sir Edward Digges, one of the early governors of the colony (1655-58).³ In contrast, James Dooley was the son of Irish immigrants, John and Sarah Dooley, who settled in Richmond in the 1830s. John Dooley became quite prosperous as the owner of a large hat manufacturing business and as an investor. As a youth, James excelled in his studies and aspired to make a fortune. He graduated first in his class from Georgetown College (now University) in 1860. When war came, he enlisted in Company C of the First Virginia Infantry Regiment. Within a month, however, he had been wounded and captured at the Battle of Williamsburg. Soon after the war, he completed a master's degree at Georgetown. Despite post-war turmoil, he established a successful law practice.⁴ While it is not known where and when their courtship blossomed, on September 11, 1869, the promising young attorney and the blonde-haired belle were married in the home of the bride's sister Lucy and her husband Dr. Benjamin M. Atkinson at the intersection of Augusta and Frederick Streets in Staunton, Virginia.⁵

In the post-Reconstruction years, after serving three terms in the Virginia legislature (1871-1877) Dooley had turned his focus to the rejuvenation of southern railroads. With a small group of Richmond associates, Major Dooley, as he was known by his contemporaries, concentrated first on rebuilding the Richmond & Danville Railroad and expanding it into the Deep South. He later participated in the founding of the Seaboard Air Line Railroad and served on the board of the Chesapeake & Ohio. His involvement in railroads led on to major investments in the Sloss Sheffield Iron and Steel Company in Alabama and other diverse ventures. Touted by the *New York Star* as "one of the best known Southern men on Wall Street," he not only amassed a great personal fortune but at the same time played an important role in the emergence of the New South.⁶ A leader in development of his city, he sat on local hospital and orphanage boards and for many years served as president of the Art Club of Richmond. His special love of European art and culture is strongly evident in the character and contents of both Maymont and Swannanoa.

Sallie Dooley was a writer, expressing in her poetry and stories



both her love of natural beauty and her nostalgia for the rural, antebellum world of her childhood. Her book, *Dem Good Ole Times*, published in 1906 by Doubleday, Page & Company, a collection of plantation stories, places her squarely in the tradition of Lost Cause apologists. She also took a leadership role in founding the Daughters of the American Revolution and the Society of Colonial Dames in Virginia. An avid amateur horticulturist, Mrs. Dooley lavished particular attention on the gardens of Maymont and Swannanoa. Together the Dooleys traveled widely throughout the country, frequented various fashionable resorts, and enjoyed touring Europe. Though southerners born and raised, they embraced a cosmopolitan outlook and thrived in the changing world around them.

Creating a Mountaintop Showplace

In the winter of 1909, James Dooley's negotiations to buy a highly desirable tract of land on Afton Mountain began in earnest. Straddling the Nelson and Augusta County line, the property afforded dramatic, panoramic views of Rockfish Gap and the Shenandoah Valley. After a lull in negotiations, Major Dooley authorized Mrs. Dooley's nephew, Fitzhugh Elder of Staunton, Virginia, to finalize the purchase. He wrote: "Dear Fitz, Your Aunt is exceedingly desirous that I should buy a tract just above the Mountain Top property which is owned by a man named Yount."⁷ They would have been very familiar with the area, having spent leisure time with other Richmonders at Afton's Mountain Top Hotel.⁸ Dooley further stated that he particularly wanted to secure "the spot called by us Carrie's Rest, where you get the view of both valleys at the same time." In closing, he emphasized that Mrs. Dooley's desires were uppermost considerations: "Mrs. Dooley wants the property and I want to gratify her. I am able to pay for it and, it would seem, I ought to be able to buy it."⁹ By the spring of 1911, the transaction was complete. Thereupon, the Dooleys commenced a major building project, creating a luxurious mansion, surrounded by lavish gardens and an expansive, mountaintop landscape. The estate, which they named Swannanoa, eventually encompassed 761 acres.¹⁰

To have a summer residence at such a beautiful location near extended family would be ideal, especially as the couple grew older. The families of Mrs. Dooley's elder sisters—Anna Fitzhugh May Elder and Lucy Emma May Atkinson—lived nearby in Staunton, Virginia. About one hundred miles to the southwest, Major Dooley's sister—Florence Dooley Lewis—lived with her family in Sweet Springs, West Virginia.



Major Dooley's business associate Frederic W. Scott was also drawn to the area, acquiring 385 acres on the same ridge where he and his wife built their castle-like summer retreat, Royal Orchard in 1911. The Chesapeake & Ohio Railroad, of which Major Dooley was a director, made access to Afton very convenient.

From a financial perspective, Major Dooley may have found it a propitious time to expend hundreds of thousands of dollars on a new home. Like other millionaires, he would have been closely monitoring the progress of federal legislation that would impose income tax, which was finally approved by Congress in 1913, the very year Swannanoa was completed. The period between the Dooleys' Afton real estate transaction and the completion of Swannanoa was indeed a very busy and a very expensive time for the couple. During the summer of 1910, they were traveling in Europe, taking in the great museums and cultural monuments and acquiring paintings and sculpture for their home.¹¹ Surely, as they traveled the continent, particularly in Italy, a country for which they held a strong affinity, the Dooleys contemplated ideas for their future summer home. While plans for Swannanoa moved forward,



The Italian Garden at Swannanoa (Courtesy Maymont Mansion Collection)



at Maymont, the Italian Garden, the Japanese Garden, and other landscape embellishments were being planned and completed. Again, in 1912, the Dooleys spent the summer in Europe.

For the wealthy of the Gilded Age, the ideal summer home was reaching grandiose proportions. And so it was with Swannanoa. The extravagance of its materials, decoration, and size far exceeded that of Maymont. Architectural historian, Richard Guy Wilson states:

Swannanoa is one of the few Virginia houses that rivals the lavish 'cottages' of Newport, or the vast country places of Long Island and the Berkshires . . . it exemplifies the American Renaissance and the pre-income-tax era. Thorstein Veblen identified a passion for "conspicuous consumption" that seemed to grip American millionaires as they vied with one another to construct giant houses that would only be occupied for small portions of the year. The architects of these palaces envisioned an American aristocracy and were consequently inspired by the palaces of European royalty as their prototypes.¹²

According to the *Valley Virginian*, in April of 1911, "Major Dooley and twenty of his friends and a surveyor from Richmond spent most of the past week at his recently purchased farm near Afton, having the roads, walks, flower gardens surveyed and situation [sic] for a very large residence."¹³ Surely William Churchill Noland (1865-1951) and Henry Eugene Baskervill (1867-1946), the principals of a prestigious Richmond architectural firm, were in the party. After the death of the Maymont Mansion architect Edgerton Rogers in 1901, the Dooleys had turned to Noland & Baskervill for the continuing development of their Richmond estate. In 1904, the firm designed a new carriage house and in subsequent years, the Italian Garden and other major outbuildings and landscape features. As a level of trust had apparently developed, the Dooleys selected the firm to design their summer home. Noland and Baskervill were well-educated, well-traveled Richmonders who formed a partnership in 1897. According to architect Mary Harding Sadler, "They brought to their work a knowledge of classical and Renaissance prototypes, as well as a knowledge of the highest current architectural standards embodied by the most prominent firms of their time In comparison to other Richmond architectural firms working at the turn of the century, Noland & Baskervill's work was more correct, looked with greater accuracy at historic precedent, and more restrained."¹⁴ Noland & Baskervill contributed many notable structures to the Richmond skyline, including Temple Beth Ahabah; St. James's Protestant Episcopal Church; the Beaux Arts-style residence of Mr. and Mrs. Frederic W. Scott at 909 West



Franklin Street; the Jefferson Davis Monument; and with John Kevan Peebles of Norfolk, the wings of the Virginia State Capitol. The partnership dissolved around 1917.¹⁵

While Noland was associated with Major Dooley through the Art Club of Richmond, it was Baskervill who developed a close friendship with the Dooleys. According to Baskervill's daughter-in-law, Major Dooley sent him to Italy to locate marble, to acquire garden ornaments and furnishings, and to find inspiration for Swannanoa as well as Maymont.¹⁶ Baskervill's last Maymont commission was the Dooleys' Greek temple-style mausoleum, constructed in 1923. Baskervill served as pallbearer at the funerals of both Major and Mrs. Dooley.

Noland & Baskervill's design for Swannanoa pays tribute to the Italian Renaissance, and is particularly reminiscent of the sixteenth-century Villa Medici in Rome. Several prominent Gilded Age mansions adapted Italian Renaissance styling, notably the Breakers, completed in 1895 in Newport, Rhode Island, the summer home of Cornelius Vanderbilt II designed by Richard Morris Hunt. Closer to home, the Jefferson Hotel in Richmond by Carrère and Hastings, completed in 1895, was an Italian Renaissance-inspired design with which the Dooleys were very familiar.¹⁷

Waynesboro contractor Ree Ellis was engaged for the project. The recollections of his niece, recorded by Cabell Vest, describe the Italian artists brought in to complete the painted decorations of the interior. Another oral history recounts the "novelty and confusion" of the building site "caused by the different languages spoken by the laborers and skilled artisans and the great difficulty that the mule and horse teams had in hauling the blocks of stone up the mountain from the Afton railroad station to the estate grounds."¹⁸ Construction was completed in 1913 at a reported cost of \$300,000.¹⁹

The Dooleys selected Neuman & Company to coordinate the interior decoration of Swannanoa. The decorating and furnishing business operated in New York City from the 1880s through 1926. Between 1911 and 1919, Major Dooley made payments to Neuman totaling \$183,000. In addition to notations of "payment under contract," his check register records payments for everything from second-floor woodwork and plastering to "Swan furniture."²⁰

"Queen of the Peaks"

An impressive marble arch and double wrought-iron gate originally marked Swannanoa's entrance.²¹ Glimpses of the red tile roof



and the soaring twin towers visible above the tree tops still stir anticipation of the grand prospect of the front façade that awaits at the end of the drive. Early aerial photographs of the estate show an expansive, open landscape surrounding the villa that would have offered spectacular views in every direction. Faced with Georgia marble, the three-story dwelling set on a full-basement totals 22,000-square-feet.²² The west façade with the porte cochère, which is now deteriorating, overlooks the Italian Garden.²³ Characteristic of Italian-Renaissance-villa design, an arcaded loggia spans the east front between the projecting towers and above it an open balcony. The classical detailing of the loggia incorporates references to the owners—carved medallions with swans, Mrs. Dooley’s chosen emblem, and horse heads from the Dooley crest. Above the central, third-story Palladian window, a cartouche supported by female figures bears the date 1912 (*not* the date of completion). According to Major Dooley’s check register, Tiffany Studios supplied the high-relief bronze panels with cherub figures on the double entrance doors, now robbed of their original patina. Flanking the doors are marble panels, finely carved with low relief foliate decoration and the Latin names of the four seasons. Above the door, a bronze roundel repeats the swan motif.

This stately entrance opens onto the richly appointed interior. Lavish use of white Carrara and red Sienna marble in the spacious Entrance Hall—floors, wainscoting, pilasters, and the massive mantel—conveys an overwhelming impression of grandeur and luxury. The walls were originally ornamented with stenciled decoration, a portion of which survives in the adjoining hall. The white marble staircase with a decorative bronze railing rises to a broad landing. Decorative wall paintings on either side of the grand staircase represent the Virginia state seal and the arms of Great Britain, paying homage perhaps to Mrs. Dooley’s descent from King Edward III. The domed ceiling is decorated with a fanciful scene of frolicking putti drawing the chariot of a goddess, probably Juno, and at each corner, female figures representing the four seasons.²⁴

Rising on the wall above the landing is the greatest treasure of Swannanoa—the stunning stained glass window by Tiffany Studios, certainly the largest residential window by Tiffany Studios in Virginia. Measuring approximately twelve feet by ten feet, it is signed in the lower right “Tiffany Studios.” The window depicts a youthful Sallie Dooley dressed in classical garb in the midst of a lushly planted Italian Garden. A pergola with climbing roses echoes the terraced garden just outside the



window.²⁵ The window embodies many characteristics of Tiffany's finest works—the glittering iridescence of a distant mountain sunset and in the foreground, a mass of colorful hollyhocks, foxgloves, nasturtiums, and other flowers, which incorporates examples of Tiffany's "confetti" glass and "mottled" glass. James Dooley's check register shows his payment of \$3,500 to Tiffany Studios for the window.²⁶ The artist's proof photograph of the window survives in the Maymont Mansion Archives.

To the right of the hall is the Florentine-style Dining Room with carved and coffered ceiling and red, tooled leather wall covering. Adjoining the Dining Room is the Breakfast Room with intact decorative wall painting of trailing morning glory vines. Doors at the end of the Dining Room lead to the butler's pantry and backstairs. To the left of the Entrance Hall is the Library. The ceiling and the walls above the bookcases are enriched by decorative painting and cartouches bearing the "D" monogram. The walnut bookcases are adorned with carved quotations in Latin, undoubtedly selected by the learned Major Dooley himself.²⁷ To the left of the grand staircase, the small room labeled "Den" on Noland & Baskervill's floor plan is a significant surviving example of the type of intimate spaces in late Victorian houses fashionably decorated in a style that would have been referred to as "oriental," a term at the time referring to a wide geographic area. Decorative detailing conveys a Near Eastern theme: elaborate, pierce-carved teak woodwork; the overmantel, featuring a painting of a domed building reminiscent of the Taj Mahal; and a brass, incense-burner-like chandelier. Beyond the den is the Louis-XVI-style drawing room with white painted woodwork and the original gold damask wall covering, which is now deteriorating. Richly framed with delicately tinted, ornamental plasterwork, the original ceiling painting of blue sky and clouds was intact until recent years. A music-related decorative motif is carried out in the carved detailing of the room. The white marble mantel, signed "Professor Rafael Romanelli," depicts cherubs tending the fire, one carrying kindling and the other operating a bellows.

At the top of the double staircase, a spacious hall gives access to the six bedrooms of the second floor. Finely carved woodwork and wall stenciling remain intact. Mrs. Dooley's room was located in the southeast corner with an adjoining tower room, porch, and bathroom. Mrs. Dooley's famous swan furniture, now part of the Maymont Mansion collection, was acquired from Neuman & Co. for her suite. Painted medallions with delicate floral imagery flanked by swans ornament each



corner of the ceiling. Major Dooley's bedroom was located in the north-east corner with an adjoining tower room, porch, and bathroom. The third floor included two bedrooms connected by a bathroom and two long halls leading to stairs that ascend into the two towers, which offer breathtaking views.

The belowstairs floor plan shows five bedrooms for domestic servants; all provided with windows along the south side of the house. Other rooms include the laundry room, kitchen, wine cellar, storage rooms, and the furnace room. The house boasted all the modern conveniences of the day including an elevator and a central vacuum system. An indirect radiator system originally heated the building. Electricity for the estate was generated in the Stable.

To complement the architecture of the house an elaborate Italian Garden was created. Typical of its Renaissance model, the garden is arrayed in broad terraces on the sunny hillside facing the west façade of the house. Another traditional feature, the Pergola formed the major axis of the upper terrace, now deteriorating. Beyond the Italian



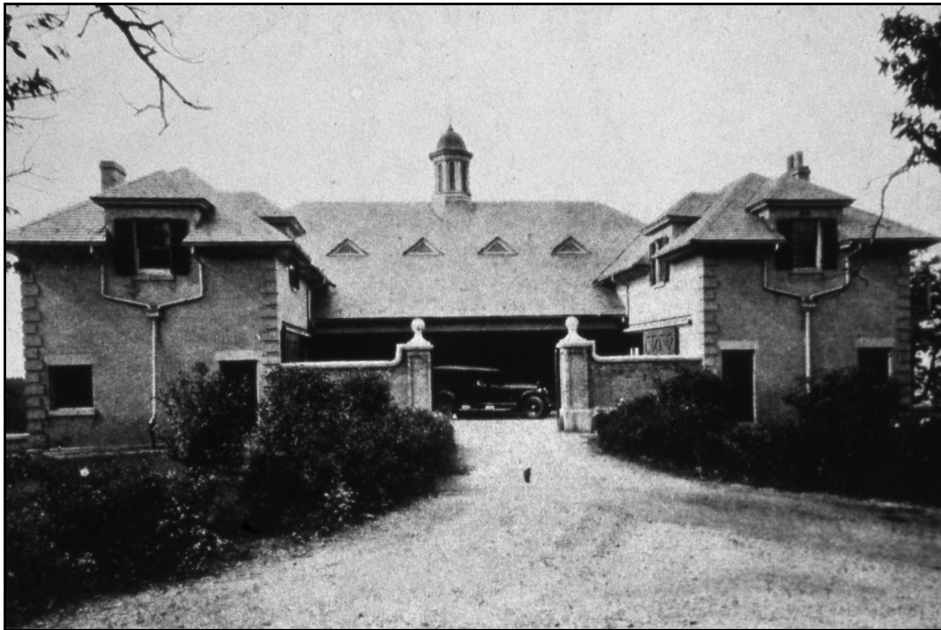
*Mrs. Dooley's swan bed, acquired for Swannanoa, is now at Maymont.
(Courtesy Maymont, Richmond, Virginia)*



Garden, an informal garden featured a rustic stonework bridge crossing a lily pond. Early photographs and a lengthy order for trees, shrubs, and flowers dating to 1912 reveal the magnitude of the Dooleys' planting scheme.²⁸ To maintain Swannanoa, the estate manager George G. Dalhouse supervised about ten groundskeepers. The Dooleys also engaged the expert care of English head gardeners. Charles Wilkins, employed from 1917 to 1922, had worked at English country houses and after coming to the United States, at estates near Bryn Mawr, Pennsylvania, and Wilmington, Delaware.²⁹ Another Englishman, Joseph Smith, was engaged in 1923.³⁰

Reminiscent of an Italian campanile or bell tower, the Water Tower, now endangered, held a 40,000-gallon tank fed from "copious springs."³¹ The cottage near the Water Tower was built after the Dooleys' time. A small residence for the estate manager was constructed south of the Italian Garden. A handsome, gray brick stable, also now endangered, conformed to the traditional U-shaped carriage house plan with projecting wings on either side of a central courtyard. Automobiles and carriages were housed in the two wings. Stalls for pleasure horses, the harness room, and a workshop were also located on the first floor. Wagon storage, the dairy, stalls for work horses and cows, and the generator were located on the ground level. In addition to the hayloft and grain room, the second floor included quarters for the head gardener and the chauffeur. Situated beyond the Stable was a greenhouse.³²

By the time Swannanoa was completed in 1913, Major Dooley was seventy-two and Mrs. Dooley was sixty-seven. According to oral tradition, they would depart Maymont in early summer and remain at Swannanoa through early fall. They were accompanied by the chauffeur and as many as six servants. Hannah Walker, a house maid, referred to the gleaming white marble mansion as "a castle in the sky." She remembered the special preparations made for one guest in particular—Lady Nancy Astor, whose family resided nearby at Mirador.³³ Mrs. Dooley's nieces and nephews and their families living in Staunton were frequent visitors. Her great niece, Nancy Elder Brown, recalled that as a child Swannanoa seemed like a dream house.³⁴ Mrs. Dooley's great nephew Fitzhugh Elder, Jr., also recalled childhood visits. He described enjoying a pony and cart that was provided for his amusement and "operating the fountain in the rose garden with a silver ball suspended in air by the force of the water." One evening, he dined alone with his aunt Florence Elder, who wanted him to remember "something of the grand manner in which they had lived. Two butlers were in attendance



The Water Tower and Rustic Bridge at Swannanoa, top, and the Stable, below. (Courtesy Maymont Mansion Archives)



in the Dining Room; however, I was more impressed with a tapestry depicting a prisoner being carted away.”³⁵

After Major Dooley’s death in 1922, Mrs. Dooley spent longer periods of time at Swannanoa. She died there on September 5, 1925. In addition to their bequest of Maymont to the city of Richmond, the childless couple left the greatest portion of their wealth to Richmond charities. Swannanoa was left to Major Dooley’s surviving sisters upon the death of Mrs. Dooley.³⁶ While some furnishings were inherited by family, the Dooleys’ wills specified that a selection of pieces from their two residences be left to form the museum collection of the Maymont Mansion. Others were sold at auctions in 1926 and 1929.³⁷ By July 1926, the Dooley sisters had sold the property to a group of Richmond investors who developed the estate as the Swannanoa Country Club. In 1928, President Calvin Coolidge and his wife spent Thanksgiving weekend as guests of the country club. A *Valley Virginian* headline read, “Coolidges Rave Over Swannanoa.”³⁸ Despite presidential praise, the venture succumbed to the Great Depression, and the property’s ownership reverted to the Dooley family in 1935.³⁹ The property was virtually abandoned until 1944 when a group of Charlottesville businessmen, led by A.T. Dulaney, formed Skyline-Swannanoa Corporation and bought the property. In 1948, the artist Walter Russell and his wife, Lao, leased the house and gardens from Skyline-Swannanoa Corporation as their home and the headquarters of their University of Science and Philosophy. Swannanoa was then opened to the public for tours. Dr. Russell died in 1963, and Mrs. Russell in 1989. The Russell’s foundation vacated the estate in 1998. A.T. Dulaney’s grandson James F. Dulaney, Jr., of Skyline-Swannanoa Corporation has managed Swannanoa for many years.

Extolled by its mistress as “Queen of the Peaks,” Swannanoa undoubtedly represented for James and Sallie Dooley a dream come true as they neared the end of a very full life together.⁴⁰ While the original splendor of their palatial villa has faded, Swannanoa remains a significant architectural landmark—a remarkable expression of the Gilded Age in Virginia—that deserves a high level of stewardship to ensure its long-term preservation.

About the author: Dale Cyrus Wheary, Maymont’s Curator and Director of Historical Collections and Programs, has directed the conservation, restoration, documentation, and interpretation of the Maymont Mansion for more than thirty-five years. Maymont is open year round; tours of the Maymont Mansion tours are offered Tuesday–Sunday, 12–5 p.m. For more information, visit www.maymont.org.



Endnotes

¹ *The Virginia Landmarks Register*, Fourth Edition, edited by Calder Loth (Charlottesville: The University Press of Virginia, 1999), 333.

² Dale Cyrus Wheary, *Swannanoa: Summer Home of James and Sallie Dooley* (Richmond: Maymont Foundation, 2013). See also Dale Cyrus Wheary, "Maymont: Gilded Age Estate," *Maymont Notes*, No.1, Fall 2001 (Richmond: Maymont Foundation), 9-14.

³ Ben H. Coke, *John May, Jr. of Virginia, His Descendants and Their Land* (Baltimore: Gateway Press, Inc., 1975). See also Landon Bell, *The Old Free State, A Contribution to the History of Lunenburg County and Southside Virginia* (Richmond: William Byrd Press, 1927).

⁴ R.A. Brock, *Virginia and Virginians* (Richmond and Toledo H.H. Hardesty, Publisher, 1888), 778-779. See also Lyon G. Tyler, *Men of Mark in Virginia* (Washington, D.C.: Men of Mark Publishing Co. vol. 1, 1906), 167, 168.

⁵ "Doomed House Had Interesting Past; Maj. Dooley, Miss May Married There," *Roanoke Times*, October 17, 1954. See also "Married," *Richmond Daily Whig*, September 15, 1869, which states that the Dooleys were married in the Staunton home of Major Elder (the husband of Sallie Dooley's sister Anna Fitzhugh May Elder).

⁶ "What a Southern Capitalist Thinks of the Results of Grover Cleveland's Administration," *The New York Star*, August 9, 1888, 7. The author is indebted to Lynn Bayliss for sharing this reference.

⁷ James Dooley to Fitzhugh Elder, Sr., November 21, 1910, Maymont Mansion Archives. The owner from whom Dooley purchased the property was Joseph B. Yount.

⁸ "From Mountain Top," *The Times*, Richmond, Virginia, 22 July 1894, 2. See also Ann Wright, "Crossing Afton Mountain," *Virginia Living* (October 2005), 185.

⁹ James Dooley to Fitzhugh Elder, Sr., November 21, 1910.

¹⁰ "Swannanoa," R.B. Chaffin & Co. (Richmond, Virginia, 1926). This is a real estate sales brochure. Why the Dooleys chose the name Swannanoa is not documented. It is interesting to note, however, that the Swannanoa River in western North Carolina flows near Asheville to which the Richmond & Danville had connected by the 1880s when Major Dooley was a major investor and board member. Several resort hotels were built there in the 1880s. The Swannanoa River flows through a portion of George Washington Vanderbilt's estate Biltmore, completed in 1895; his private railroad car was named Swannanoa.

¹¹ *Richmond Times Dispatch*, August 5, 1910, 5. See also Galerie Sangiorgi to James Dooley, June 7, 1910, Maymont Mansion archives.

¹² Richard Guy Wilson, et al., *The Making of Virginia Architecture* (Richmond: Virginia Museum of Fine Arts, 1992), 342. Dr. Wilson is the Commonwealth Professor of Architectural History at the University of Virginia.

¹³ "Afton News," *Valley Virginia*, April 21, 1911, 1.

¹⁴ Mary Harding Sadler, "Noland and Baskervill," an unpublished paper presented at Maymont, February 1993.

¹⁵ Karen Steele, "Henry E. Baskervill: Eclectic Architect," *Richmond Quarterly*, (Summer 1984, vol. 7, no. 1), 24-31. See also Christopher Novelli, "William Noland and Residential Design on Richmond's Franklin Street," master's thesis, School of Architecture, University of Virginia, 1990. John E. Wells and Robert E. Dalton, *The Virginia Architects, 1835-1955* (Richmond: New South Architectural Press, 1997). 328-331. Dale Cyrus Wheary, *Swannanoa: Summer Home of James and Sallie Dooley*.

¹⁶ Mrs. Henry Coleman Baskerville, daughter-in-law of H. E. Baskervill, interviewed by Dale Wheary, April 1986.

¹⁷ Lewis Ginter was the hotel's principal owner; however, James Dooley was among the earliest subscribers to build a grand hotel in Richmond ("Movement Began Many Years Ago," *Times-Dispatch*, 19 March 1905, p. 16.). After a disastrous fire, Dooley was among those who formed the Jefferson Realty Corporation to rebuild the hotel, which was renovated in 1907.

¹⁸ "M.R. Ellis Gets the Dooley Contract," *Valley Virginian*, April 21, 1911. See also Dudley Cabell Vest, "Swannanoa: An American Renaissance Masterpiece in Virginia," master's thesis, School of Architecture, University of Virginia, May 1997, 25.

¹⁹ A number of documents point to completion in 1913, including Noland & Baskervill specifications for electrical wiring of the residence dated December 1912, specifications for millwork in the residence dated January 1913, and a photograph in the Waynesboro Public Library dated 1913, showing the house still under construction.



²⁰ Dooley Check Register, Branch & Co. Papers, Virginia Historical Society.

²¹ The arch was demolished after 1945. According to J.F. Dulaney, grandson of A.T. Dulaney, a founder of Skyline Swannanoa Corporation, the wrought-iron gates were reinstalled at his grandfather's Charlottesville home on Rugby Road.

²² Sales brochure, R.B. Chaffin & Co. (Richmond, Virginia, 1926); Swannanoa Country Club brochure, ca. 1926.

²³ Orientations noted on Noland & Baskervill drawings and in the 1926 sales brochure conflict with *Google Earth*. According to *Google Earth*, the twin towers are on the east façade.

²⁴ Despite stories told over the years, the female figure seated in the chariot bears no resemblance to Mrs. Dooley. It is a fanciful scene, loosely based on classical mythology.

²⁵ Stories told over the years refer to this figure as a representation of St. Cecilia, a martyred Roman matron; however, as the patron saint of music, St. Cecilia is traditionally depicted with a musical instrument, yet none of the traditional iconography of the saint is present in the design. No known historical documentation associates the window with St. Cecilia.

²⁶ Dooley Check Register, Branch & Co. Papers, Virginia Historical Society.

²⁷ *Homineum Pagina Nostra Sapit* ("Men and their manners I describe.") Martailis, Roman poet; *Involuta Veritas In Alto Latet* ("Truth lies wrapped up and hidden in depths.") Seneca, Roman Stoic philosopher; *Homo Doctus In Se Semper Divitias Habet* ("A learned man always has wealth within himself.") Greek lyric poet Simonides, as quoted by Roman poet Phaedrus; *Non Refert Quam Multos Libros Sed Quam Bonos Habeas* ("It makes no difference how many books you have, but how many good books."). Translations courtesy of Tom Driscoll.

²⁸ Thomas Meehan & Sons, Philadelphia, Pa. to Major James H. Dooley, Afton, Va., (September 7, 1912), Maymont Mansion Archives.

²⁹ Mary Wilkins Cross to Dale Wheary, May 21, 2000, Maymont Mansion Oral History Files.

³⁰ Branch & Co. Papers, Virginia Historical Society.

³¹ "Swannanoa," R.B. Chaffin & Co. 1926.

³² Mary Wilkins Cross to Dale Wheary. See also Noland & Baskervill floor plans.

³³ Elizabeth L. O'Leary, *From Morning to Night: Domestic Service at Maymont House and in the Gilded Age South*, (Charlottesville: University of Virginia Press, 2003), 108–09.

³⁴ Nancy Elder Brown interview by Dale Wheary, 1982, transcript, Maymont Mansion Oral History Files.

³⁵ Fitzhugh Elder, Jr., "Recollections of Swannanoa," unpublished manuscript, 1990.

³⁶ In 1925, James Dooley's surviving sisters included Alice E. Dooley (1845–1937), Sarah Dooley (1854–1927), and Josephine Dooley Houston (1857–1946). A recently published description of Swannanoa erroneously states that all of Major Dooley's sisters were nuns. Only Sarah joined a holy order, eventually becoming Mother Mary Magdalen, the Mother Superior of Monte Maria Convent in Richmond.

³⁷ According to oral history, still other furnishings that remained at Swannanoa were dispersed to Swannanoa Country Club shareholders at the time of the company's demise.

³⁸ "Coolidges 'Rave' Over Swannanoa," *The Waynesboro News* (November 29, 1928), 1.

³⁹ "Swannanoa Regained by Dooleys," *The Washington Post*, (September 29, 1935), 18.

⁴⁰ Sallie Dooley, "Swannanoa." Lines from a poem "hanging in a downstairs room penned by Mrs. Dooley," quoted in an undated Waynesboro newspaper around the time of the sale in May 1926.



A History of Political Cartoons and the Career of Jim McCloskey

By Matt Darroch

Editor's note: In 2014 Jim McCloskey, the editorial cartoonist at the Daily News Leader in Staunton, Va., from 1989-2012, donated his collection of several hundred cartoons and associated correspondence to the Augusta County Historical Society. McCloskey is a nationally acclaimed and award-winning cartoonist. Graduate student intern Matt Darroch organized and processed the collection. He also interviewed McCloskey and wrote this article on the history of political cartoons and McCloskey's career. For his work on this archival project and publication in the Bulletin, Darroch was awarded a Richard Hamrick Scholarship.

A cartoon is a drawing or image intended to make us laugh. They can contain stereotypes, symbols, puns, allusions, and analogies. They can expand a child's imagination with tales of brave heroes, glittering magic, and damsels in distress. They can be a watchdog guarding against political misconduct by sniffing out the stench of corruption. They can be frozen in print or brought to life on television or the big screen. But this is a modern take on the word; it has not always been defined this way. For centuries, the word "cartoon" was part of the lexicon of professional artists who used it to refer to preliminary sketches of paintings. Not until July 1843, when the British government planned to hold an exhibit to decide which artwork (or cartoons as they were called) was to festoon the walls of the Parliament, did the meaning of cartoon undergo revision. This apparent frivolous spending drew the ire of John Leech, who published a drawing entitled, "Cartoon No.1," in *Punch Magazine*.¹ It depicted a downtrodden crowd of commoners huddled around a gallery of high-priced paintings—a not-so-subtle nod to government waste and income imbalance. Thereafter, caricaturists became known as political cartoonists, eventually turning a hobby into a veritable job.²

Even though the provenance of the word only dates back to 1843, cartoons were undoubtedly drawn much earlier—probably since time immemorial. It can be assumed that drawings making some type of statement (i.e. political or social) arose when humans first gained the necessary materials and know-how to express themselves artistically. The oldest-known



cartoon has been traced to 1360 B.C, during the era of the New Kingdom of Egypt.³ The portrait has since faded almost beyond recognition, but it appears to be the likeness of Ikhnaton, the father-in-law of one of the most famous figures in ancient history: King Tutankhamen. Ikhnaton's legacy was marred by his failed attempt to do away with polytheistic religion in favor of a single, all-powerful God. The portrait is particularly unflattering, lending credence to the theory that it reflects the opprobrium his memory stirred among the Egyptian people.⁴

Political cartoons, however, did not figure into the lives of the broader public until the outbreak of the Protestant Reformation, set off by Martin Luther in 1517 when he nailed his *Ninety-Five Theses* (a list of grievances against the Roman Catholic Church) on the door of the All Saints' Church in Wittenberg, Germany. Fed up with the Catholic Church's abuse of power, Luther condemned the selling of indulgences, which promised God's forgiveness in return for a lump sum of money. To quicken the spread of Protestantism and extend its reach into every village and town in Western Europe, cartoons were used as a means of conveying propaganda and recruiting followers. Even as the religious movement gained currency within the middle-classes, its ultimate success hinged on its ability to tap into the woefully uneducated peasantry. Cartoons made Protestantism more accessible to the illiterate in ways that the written word simply could not. Printed on posters and pamphlets, political cartoons played an integral role in getting the Protestant word out and providing it with an initial core of believers.⁵

Fast-forward a couple of centuries and the first political cartoon to make waves in colonial North America was drawn by Benjamin Franklin and published in the *Pennsylvanian Gazette* on May 9, 1754. An image that has been woven into the tapestry of American history, a serpentine snake is dissected and cut into eight segments that represent each colony. The image plays on the prevailing superstition that if a severed snake was not stitched back together, it would reanimate itself before sunset. The slogan "Join or Die" is displayed at the bottom of the illustration and was intended to help rally the colonies together to defeat the French in the Seven Years War (1754-63). The political cartoon would later be reprised during the Stamp Acts of 1765 and again in 1774 as the colonies began to burst at the seams with revolutionary spirit. It has since come to symbolize American patriotism and unity.⁶

As political cartoons began to catch on in North America, the methods and technologies used to produce and disseminate them were quite



basic. From the 1740s to the 1820s, cartoons were printed through a process that relied on copper or woodcut engravings. Engravers would use tools, usually nothing more than simple knives, to painstakingly etch their illustrations into a wooden block or copperplate. After the ink was applied, the engravings were pressed onto a broadside like a stamp and sold for pocket change. One of the most famous engravers, Paul Revere, was a silversmith by trade but when money was tight and people could not afford luxury goods, he dabbled in engraving to supplement his income. Revere's best-selling engraving was a political cartoon that sensationalized the Boston Massacre. Although it was common practice, he copied an illustration done by Henry Pelham, a loyal British sympathizer.⁷ Ever the rabble-rouser, Revere added an anti-British flair in a conscious effort to provoke wide-spread outrage. Political cartoons, however, still remained a rarity. Publishers were constantly hampered with insufficient funds that put strict limitations on the amount of cartoons they could print. To be more cost efficient, many cartoons had an overly generic style so that they could be recycled and reused.⁸

The advent of lithography was a major technological advancement that made the process of printing easier and cheaper. Lithography required only three things: a slab of limestone, ink, and a wax crayon. The limestone was drenched with a special solution of water and gum-arabic, an oil-based ink that is naturally repelled by wax. As the ink clung to areas devoid of wax, an image took shape that would then be pressed onto a sheet of paper, delivering a product that was clearer and more precise than its predecessor.⁹ Lithography became the industry standard from 1828 to 1865, raising the bar for the artistic quality of cartoons. Early lithograph cartoons reflected a humor that revolved around puns (usually relating to a certain politician's name), rather than the exaggerated facial and body features that became the hallmark of later work. Many of these cartoonists used crowded textual blurbs—emanating from the mouths of their characters—to get their point across.¹⁰ In the main, the talent level of American cartoonists still lagged behind that of their European counterparts.¹¹

When humor magazines were first introduced in the United States (circa 1850s) they were not well-received and got off to a rocky start. This was largely because they were, in a sense, cheap imitations of English magazines.¹² Things did not start to look up for the American magazine industry until Thomas Nast, a German immigrant, joined *Harpers Weekly* in 1862. Nast sprung into popularity during the Civil War when



he was hired as a battlefield illustrator. But his real claim to fame came in 1871, when the prolific cartoonist completed fifty drawings that laid waste to “Boss” Tweed and the infamous Tammany Ring. Tweed was an enterprising individual who rapidly rose through the political ranks and was elected to the New York State Senate in 1867. He was also head of Tammany Hall, a behind-the-scenes organization that had a stranglehold on New York’s political scene. Needless to say, he carried a lot of clout. Bribes and backdoor deals allowed him to amass a large sum of money that entrenched his powerful position.¹³ All of the corruption finally caught up to Tweed when he was arrested (1872) and sentenced to twelve years in jail, in part a result of Nast’s hard-hitting cartoons.

By the turn of the twentieth century, another innovation came along that revolutionized the newspaper industry. Photo-engraving involved a chemical process that transferred film illustrations onto zinc printing plates by treating them with a photosensitive substance.¹⁴ This was a boon for cartoonists because they were now able to use pen and paper to draw their work. In 1884, *World* published a cartoon in its newspaper entitled, “The Royal Feast of Belshazaar,” the first of its kind to win national acclaim. Gathered for an evening of gluttony and revelry at the swanky Delmonico restaurant, a group of political highbrows were depicted celebrating with presidential hopeful, James G. Blaine. In the scene, the partygoers are having so much fun that they pay no mind to a family of beggars in the foreground. Democrats all over America used the cartoon to mount a smear campaign against the Republicans. It was the first cartoon to tip a presidential race, in this case in favor of Grover Cleveland.¹⁵ Although the transition from magazines to newspapers was difficult—cartoonists saw their workload increase two-fold—by 1922 political cartoons became part and parcel of the newspaper.¹⁶

The twentieth century was marked by three political cartoonists who set themselves apart: Robert Minor, Pat Oliphant, and Herbert Block. Robert Minor (1884-1952) was a socialist at heart and saw capitalism as a flawed system. Using his distinctive grease crayon, he championed blue-collar workers and the women’s suffrage movement. A pacifist who despised war, he refused to draw pro-war propaganda for the U.S. government during World War I. Considered one of the founding fathers of modern political cartoons, Pat Oliphant (1935-) broke new ground when he started using an alter-ego—a penguin named “Punk”—to make comments and deliver punchlines.¹⁷ He embraced civil rights and won a Pulitzer Prize in 1966 for his attack on the Vietnam War.



Herbert Block, nicknamed “Herblock” (1909-2001), helped to stem the tide of the anti-communist paranoia that gripped the United States from the late 1940s to the early 1950s. He was a constant thorn in the side of politicians during the Cold War and shined a bright light on the shadows of the Richard Nixon administration.¹⁸

Looking up to these larger-than-life cartoonists was a young Jim McCloskey, who had the privilege of growing up during the heyday of editorial cartoons. While he read about and admired the exploits of Thomas Nast, Herblock, and Pat Oliphant, McCloskey’s favorite role-model was a lesser-known cartoonist named David Low, who emigrated from New Zealand to England during World War II. As a youth, starry-eyed McCloskey marveled at Low’s courage in deriding the most evil and violent person the world had ever known: Adolph Hitler. These heroes helped stimulate McCloskey’s passion for drawing cartoons, a passion he felt that he was born with: “The ability to draw was a God-given talent. I knew that I always wanted to be a cartoonist and aspired to have a comic strip someday.”¹⁹ Even as a teenager, he kept himself up to speed with news events and was attuned to political affairs. He began reading the newspaper in Middle School, which first exposed him to editorial cartoons. Something immediately clicked in his head: “It was as if the profession was tailor-made just for me as it blended my passions of cartooning and politics. There was never a question of what I would be at that point.”²⁰ Knowing what he wanted to do with his life at an early age, he spent time as a kid honing his craft and showing his drawings to his mother, hoping for her seal of approval. She always cheerfully obliged.

McCloskey excelled during college, winning a handful of awards for his cartoons that ran in the student newspaper at Fairmont State University. His academic accomplishments notwithstanding, he found it difficult to land a job after he graduated. McCloskey points to the reason behind his trouble: “Although newspapers were doing very well and cartoonists were plentiful at papers across the country, if they could afford one, they already had one. Those that didn’t have a staff cartoonist would rather have a reporter and just syndicate.”²¹ So he started to cast a wide net, applying for any and every opening in the newspaper business, no matter the job. He knew that if he managed to get his foot in the door, he could always try and publish his cartoons on the side. Eventually he got a job in Waynesboro at the *News Virginian* (1988) selling advertising, something about which he knew nothing. Juggling



two different jobs at once was no easy task. Looking back, part of him does wish that he could have focused more attention on his cartoons. But he was grateful for being able to do something that he loved, and “getting out of the office and calling on local businesses was a great way for me to learn the hot button issues and get a feel for the politics that being cooped up in the office would not have provided.”²² In this way, the marriage between advertising and cartooning went hand-in-hand.

During his time at the *Daily News Leader* (1989-2012), McCloskey was routinely recognized for his excellent work. In fact, his distinguished career is marked by an endless succession of superlatives. Every year since 1989, he was selected and featured in The Best Editorial Cartoons of the Year.²³ His poignant cartoons have raked in countless awards from the Virginia Press Association.²⁴ A testament to how far his career had taken him, he came out with a book (*Drawing Flak*) that provided an anthology of his finest cartoons from 1989-2002. In 2005, the Gannett newspaper chain (corporate owner of the *Daily News Leader*) heaped praise on McCloskey by naming him their top editorial cartoonist. This award he holds most dear: “With so many great cartoonists throughout Gannett-land, it was an honor to win such a prestigious award.”²⁵

Published at the local, state, and national level, McCloskey liked to poke fun at a multitude of topics. The Virginia Department of Transportation (VDOT), school budgets, and misuse of taxpayer money, were some recurring subjects teased out in his cartoons. But nothing gave McCloskey so much pleasure as cutting big-headed politicians down to size: “I loathed pomposity from elected officials who oozed self-importance. It was so rewarding to find how many thin-skinned politicians would get so upset at a cartoon.”²⁶ McCloskey got a kick out of how politicians, who willfully put themselves in the public eye, could get so sensitive when they were caricatured in a cartoon. He treaded the line between good-natured and mean-spirited satire with terrific care, but he knew that insulting people was an occupational hazard: “Don’t get me wrong...I didn’t draw to piss people off. That’s not what you attempt to do as a cartoonist. It isn’t hard to make people mad, regardless of your profession, so I didn’t set out to do that but it came as a natural expectation at times.”²⁷ Some of his fondest memories were of the letters and e-mails he received from readers who either complimented or condemned his cartoons. He saw that as proof that his cartoons were making people think—and that is all he intended them to do: “Anytime you take a stand, someone is going to try to take you to task for it. If



Flustered Housewife: This cartoon features an over-worked wife asking the city council for a stipend for all the domestic duties she did in the home. It refers to the controversial decision in 1992 to award three public employees a stipend—amounting to \$15,000 total—for enduring a heavy workload when the city manager resigned.

folks looked at a cartoon and were unmoved—pro or con—I looked at that as a poor cartoon.”²⁸

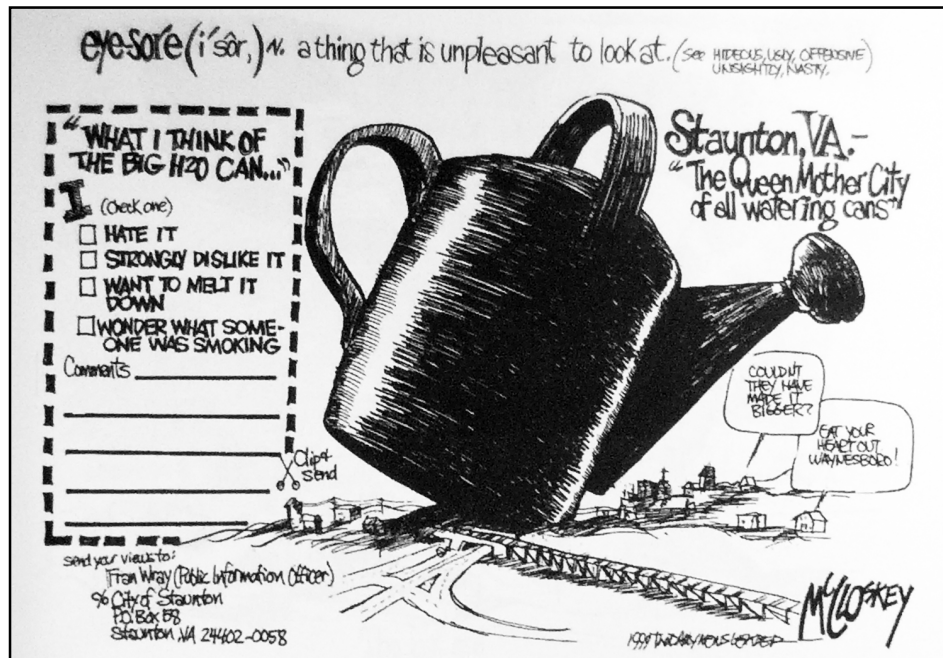
A certain Staunton councilman was anything but unmoved when he saw the McCloskey cartoon that ridiculed city council for approving \$15,000 in stipends for three public employees. They were awarded the stipend for working extra hours and picking up the slack when the city manager resigned. The cartoon featured a flustered housewife—phone tangled around her neck, boiling pot in hand, and a child tugging at her apron—asking the city council for a stipend that would compensate her for “the additional tasks that I have to do.” A public forum was held that denounced the cartoon because it “savagely attacked and attempted to demean the spirit of dedication and loyalty exhibited by public employees.”²⁹ It was pointed out that there were other people that the newspaper could pick on that “don’t even mind your feeble attempts at humor, your lack of understanding of the issues, or your unfairness to the community you claim to serve.”³⁰ The *News Leader* stuck by the



McCloskey cartoon, steadfast in the belief that the stipends were excessive. The loyal support of the newspaper was something McCloskey could always count on throughout his career.

Although McCloskey loved to ruffle the feathers of the local government, he could be equally as caustic when it came to other less politically-charged issues. Hence, his reaction when the Willie Ferguson watering can sculpture was erected at the Staunton underpass in 1999. As far as he was concerned, it was too big and stuck out like a sore thumb. He drew a cartoon that exaggerated its size, such that the towering watering can cast a shadow over all of Staunton. The focal point of the cartoon, however, is a ballot that asks what people thought of the big watering can. They could check off one of four choices: "hate it, strongly dislike it, want to melt it down, or wonder what someone was smoking." The ballot also included a comments section where people could write down their opinions. He encouraged his readers to fill the cartoon out and mail it in, giving the address of the city of Staunton. Their mailbox brimmed with all kinds of colorful responses. McCloskey also got his fair share of mail. His sarcasm struck a nerve with some of the community and a wave of discontent crashed down on him. Casting his memory back, he recalls one of the most notable letters to the editor, which "contended that I was jealous because 'McCloskey must have a teeny-tiny watering can!'"³¹ Of course, he took these letters in stride, knowing that they were all in good fun.

When a pornography store called After Hours Video (AHV) opened in Staunton in 2007, a controversy ensued that was laced with comedic potential. Situated on Spring Hill Road, the smut peddler set up shop smack-dab in the middle of a residential area. There was quite a backlash. Many worried that the decency and morality of society was wilting away. Chief among them was Ray Robertson, the Staunton Commonwealth Attorney, who predicted a grim outlook for the city if AHV was allowed to stay in business. Robertson firmly believed that "adult entertainment seemed to bring with it...a host of new problems from increases in prostitution and pimping to child molestation, disruption of marriages, unwanted pregnancies, more illegal drug activity, flagrant promiscuity, addiction, venereal disease, and organized crime."³² Police officers were sent on a clandestine mission to infiltrate the adult video store and purchase twelve videos to be sampled by a grand jury. After the grand jury poured over hours of pornographic footage, they indicted each video for excessive vulgarity. Robertson, after watching the videos himself, leveled



Watering Can Sculpture: This cartoon refers to the excessive size of the watering can sculpture that was erected at the Staunton underpass. This cartoon was drawn in 1999.

sixteen felony and eight misdemeanor charges against the video store and its owner. During the trial, the argument of the prosecution (headed by Robertson and Matthew Buzzelli) was predicated on the Virginia law of obscenity, prohibiting any person or company from selling obscene materials. They invoked the Virginia Code Section 18.2-374 which defines obscene material as anything that has "shameful or morbid interest in nudity, sexual conduct, sexual excitement, excretory functions or products thereof or sadomasochistic abuse, and which goes beyond customary limits of candor."³³ Under this definition, Robertson asserted that AHV was in violation of the obscenity law and was subject to prosecution. On the other hand, the defense (headed by nationally known civil liberties lawyers Louie Sirkin and Paul Cambria) countered with an argument that held that obscene material was constitutionally protected by the First Amendment and the right of privacy.³⁴ It was a benchmark case that garnered national attention.

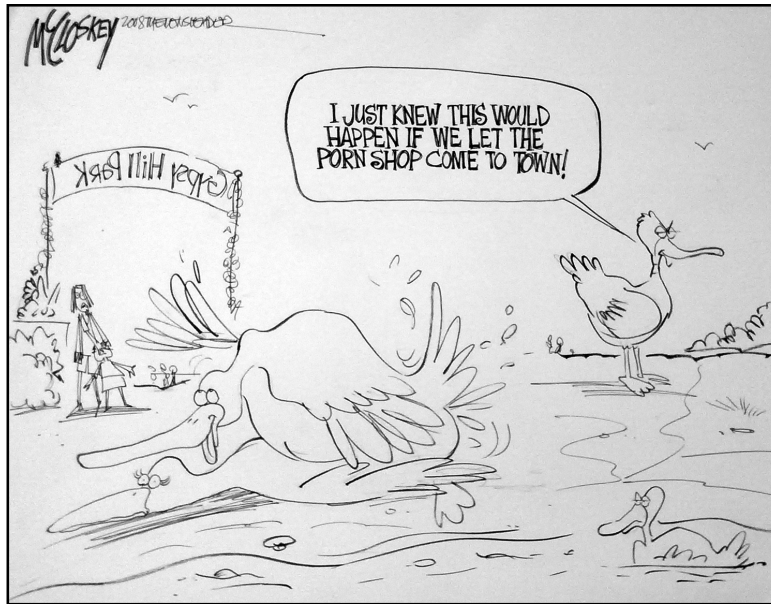
The trial furnished McCloskey with abundant ammunition with which to arm his cartoons. The whole situation seemed like it was taken straight from the script of a comedy movie. The plotline would prob-



***Porn Man Series:** The Porn Man series ran from 2007-2008 and was set up like a comic strip. It satirizes Ray Robertson, the Staunton Commonwealth Attorney, who waged a legal battle against the pornography store, After Hours Video.*

ably go something like this: A sleazy pornographer ventures to the Bible Belt and is confronted by an over-paranoid lawyer who fears that his presence is a sign that the world is crumbling into an evil wasteland of moral turpitude. It was almost too good to be true. By the time the gavel had struck and the trial was set to begin, McCloskey had been thinking about how to mock something that he saw as a travesty and wasted expense. Cue the satirical and downright hilarious Porn Man series that ran in the News Leader from 2007 to 2008.

Ray Robertson, as he was portrayed in the cartoons, looked and acted like any ordinary attorney. In the courtroom he was known for his litigious demeanor and respect for the law. But his suit and tie was just a cover. When trouble reared its head he would spring into action as Porn Man, an over-weight and bespectacled superhero. Squeezing into tights, a large "P" is emblazoned on his chest. His cape billows and belly jiggles as he leaps tall, phallic buildings in search of obscene material. XXX VHS tapes have no chance against the might of Porn Man. He can break them easily with his bare hands. Equipped with his trusty G.P.S. (Global Porn Sensor), his device detects a sordid signal in Staunton.



Ducks at Gypsy Hill Park: Although it was never published because of its lewd imagery, this cartoon depicts the pond at Gypsy Hill Park, wherein some ducks engage in sex as onlookers stare in horror. It mocks those who were calling for the closure of the pornography store, After Hours Video, by implying that its presence in the community would be a moral blight turning everyone (ducks included) into nymphomaniacs.

Passing over murders, rapes, burglaries, and drug sales, Porn Man goes on a crusade to eradicate all erotica. He protects the people from themselves, tightening the lid on all their pent up sexuality.

Porn Man sincerely thinks he is a crime-fighting superhero. He deludes himself into believing that he is actually doing the public a service. But time and time again his crusade to rid the world of obscenities dismisses flagrant crimes. Here, McCloskey implies that the trial was a drain on resources that distracted from the real criminals that prowled the streets of Staunton. He also makes references to what he believed were Robertson's hypocritical actions. For example, after Porn Man defeats Cambria (the leading defense attorney in the case) he is asked what he intends to do next. Is he going to attack internet providers and satellite TV, the wellspring of almost all pornography? Porn Man responds with a noncommittal answer: "I still need to do 'research' for my legal briefs, but I could if I wanted to." According to McCloskey, Robertson's crusade was nothing more than a sham. His super hero outfit was just for show.



Even though the *Daily News Leader* allowed McCloskey to push the envelope with his sharp wit and stinging sarcasm, he was not given free-reign to draw whatever he wanted. Although it was few and far between, McCloskey did sometimes have to withhold his cartoons from publication: "It was rare that a cartoon would be deemed unpublishable, but in those cases, I would be approached and the concerns would be communicated."³⁵ Most of the time it was only something minor, "But if a requested change was too onerous I would just pull it myself. Since my name was on the cartoon it HAD to reflect my opinion."³⁶ For example, when the porn store controversy was swirling around Staunton in 2007, he drew a scene of the picturesque pond at Gypsy Hill Park, wherein two ducks, flush with the tender emotions of romance, make love in public for all to see. As onlookers stare, mouths agape, a duck mutters to himself: "I knew this would happen if we let the porn shop come to town!" Mocking those who opposed the continued operation of the porn store, McCloskey suggests that the debauchery of the AHV was rubbing off on everyone (ducks included) and turning them into sex crazed lunatics. This cartoon never made it to publication on account of its lewd imagery. In another instance, McCloskey drew a cartoon depicting an assortment of apples in a bucket labeled "Waynesboro School Teachers." Three apples representing Todd Dunnings, Tracy Straight, and Mitch Peelings are shown rotting and emitting a rancid odor. A caption underneath the bucket says: "Only a few bad apples." This cartoon refers to three separate incidents of professional misconduct and criminal behavior carried out by teachers in the Waynesboro school system in 2005. Todd Dunnings was charged with having inappropriate relations and raping a student (he was acquitted of the latter), while Tracy Straight and Mitch Peeling were alleged to have been drinking excessive amounts of alcohol while at a school function.³⁷ This cartoon was pulled for fear of violating slander laws.

McCloskey's cartoons were not always all fun and games. In fact, when tragedy struck his cartoons could get quite somber and serious. These, he acknowledges, were the toughest to draw but he relished the opportunity to help lighten the load of those encumbered with grief: "The cartoons that I drew in response to notable deaths or chronicling a poignant or tragic event always posed the most daunting challenge, and hence, would be very rewarding when they came off." The nation was suspended in disbelief when terrorists hijacked airplanes and ran them into the side of the World Trade Center. As the reality of what



happened sunk in, everyone let out a collective sob, mourning the lives lost on that fateful day. In commemoration of 9-11, he drew a simple cartoon of Lady Liberty weeping, thrown into sharp relief by a black background that evoked the solemn mood that hung over her. McCloskey had a knack for saying a lot without using any words. When Charles Schulz (author of the Peanuts comic strip) passed away in 2000, McCloskey used a similar minimalist approach to memorialize his life. The cartoon depicts a sullen Charlie Brown hanging his head and placing his hands over his eyes, in obvious agony over his creator's death. The cartoon was requested by Schulz's widow to be put on permanent display at the Charles Schulz museum. He considers this one of his crowning achievements: "I remarked at the time that I never dreamed a Schulz would request a McCloskey cartoon!"³⁸ In 2002, Daniel Pearl, a Jewish-American journalist, was abducted by Islamic extremists under the false pretense that he was a spy. They demanded that the United States release all Muslim detainees in Guantanamo Bay. For days, America watched the news with baited breath, hoping that he would be delivered from captivity. A little more than a week later, a gruesome video



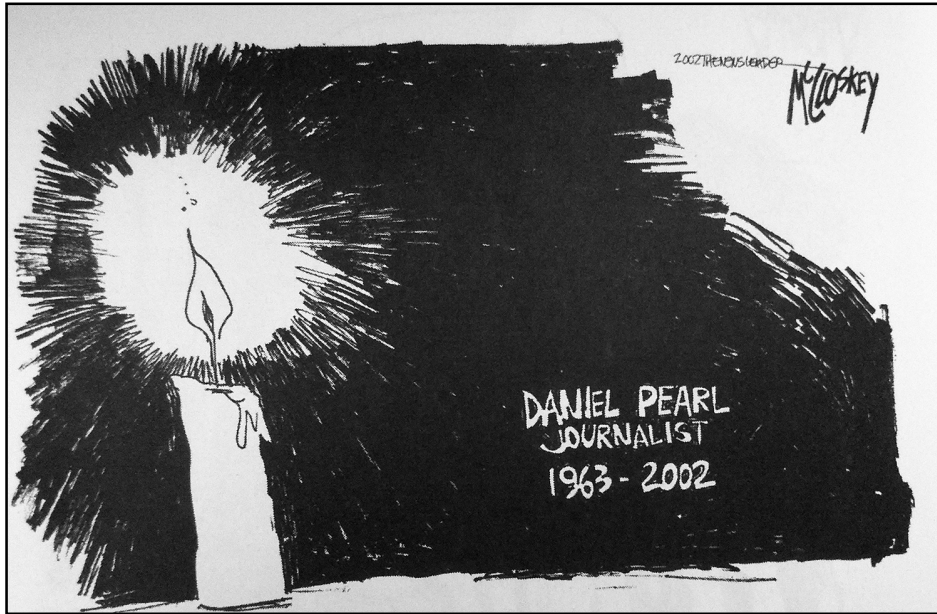
Lady Liberty's Reaction to 9-11: Commemorating 9-11, this cartoon depicts a despondent Lady Liberty, weeping over all of the innocent lives lost on that fateful day.



Schulz's Death: This cartoon shows Charlie Brown in complete sorrow, mourning the death of Charles Schulz, who was the creator of the Peanuts comic strip and one of the most famous and adored American cartoonists of all time.

surfaced of his decapitation. In response, McCloskey came up with a cartoon that showed a singular candle, burning and glowing in the dark. Accompanying the candle are three words that read like a gloomy epitaph: "Daniel Pearl; Journalist; 1963-2002." McCloskey's cartoons effectively lent a hand to help people reemerge from the deep pit of mourning. The realization that his work could relieve the sorrow left in the wake of tragedy had a humbling affect on him: "when a static black and white drawing can touch the heart, it is an amazing feeling."³⁹

Staunton, Waynesboro, and the greater Augusta County area have meant a great deal to McCloskey. He spent almost twenty five years here, raising three kids, forging enduring friendships, and pursuing his passion. Over all that time, what stuck out to him most was the strong work ethic and commitment to family, which he cites as the backbone of this community. All the experiences he had and things he learned along the way have become a part of him. He got to do what he loved surrounded by the people he loved. For that he said he is profoundly



Daniel Pearl's Death: Jewish-American journalist, Daniel Pearl, was abducted while reporting in Pakistan and later beheaded by Islamic extremists in 2002. This cartoon was drawn as a memorial to his life.

thankful: "Through my work, I have been able to inform, entertain, and yes, rile. The best that someone can hope for in life after they are gone is that they are remembered for the contributions they made."⁴⁰ When he is feeling nostalgic, he conjures up images of the enchanting architecture and scenery. But mostly his memory is occupied by the faces of the wonderful people he got to know.

It is obvious that his cartoons have made an indelible impact. At any given time, they could rattle our funny bone, strike a nerve, and tug at our heart strings. Ask yourself this: How many times did his cartoons make you laugh? How many times did they make you cry? How many times did they make you mad? This ability to induce a kaleidoscope of emotions is the mark of a truly talented cartoonist. His work kept a wary eye on the powers that be and reminded us not to take life too seriously. If nothing else, he hopes that his work can open a window into the past: "It's my fervent hope that through my work, future generations will be able to have some insight to the social history of the place we call home—through the eyes and pen of a very fortunate and grateful editorial cartoonist."⁴¹ Now that his cartoons have been preserved in the ACHS archive, it is safe to say that the history of Augusta County just got a whole lot funnier.



Bucket of Apples: Placed in the foreground of this cartoon is a large bucket of apples. The three rotting apples represent teachers in the Waynesboro school system: Todd Dunnings was charged with having inappropriate relations and raping a student (he was acquitted of the latter); Tracy Straight and Mitch Peeling were alleged to have been drinking excessive amounts of alcohol while at a school function. It was never published for fear of violating libel laws.

Bibliography

Austin, Natalie. "Morris Criticizes Editorial Cartoon," *News Leader*, July 9, 1992.

Billington, James. *Herblock's History: Political Cartoons from the Crash to the Millennium*. Ann Arbor: University of Michigan Library, 2000.

Encyclopedia Britannica Online. "Photo Engraving." Accessed August 21, 2014, <http://www.britannica.com/EBchecked/topic/457873/photoengraving>

Hess, Stephen, and Milton Kaplan. *The Ungentlemanly Art: A History of American Political Cartoons*. New York: Macmillan Published Co. Inc., 1975.

Hess, Stephen, and Sandy Northrup. *Drawn & Quartered: The History of American Political Cartoons*. Montgomery, AL: Elliot & Clark Publishing, 1996.

McCloskey, Jim. E-mail interview by author, August 28, 2014.



News Leader. A Gannett Company. "No Case Against Straight." Accessed 23, 2014, <http://www.newsleader.com/article/20050708/OPINION01/507080317/No-case-against-Straight>

Robertson, Raymond C. *After Hours: The Story of Staunton, Virginia's Famous Obscenity Trial*. Staunton: Lot's Wife Publishing, 2010.

Shikes, Ralph E. *The Indignant Elite: The Artist as Social Critic in Prints and Drawings from the Fifteenth Century to Picasso*. Boston: Beacon Press, 1969.

Vinson, J. Chal. *Thomas Nast: Political Cartoonist*. Athens: University of Georgia Press, 1967.

Endnotes

¹ John Leech (1817-1864) was a British caricaturist and illustrator who regularly published his work in *Punch*, a British humor magazine that was in circulation from 1841-2002.

² Stephen Hess and Milton Kaplan, *The Ungentlemanly Art: A History of American Political Cartoons* (New York: Macmillan Published Co. Inc., 1975), 16.

³ The New Kingdom was a period in ancient Egyptian history that spanned the sixteenth to the eleventh century BC. It saw the steady expansion of the Egyptian Empire, eventually swelling to its largest territorial extent.

⁴ Hess and Kaplan, *The Ungentlemanly Art*, 15.

⁵ Ralph E. Shikes, *The Indignant Elite: The Artist as Social Critic in Prints and Drawings from the Fifteenth Century to Picasso* (Boston: Beacon Press, 1969), 14-16.

⁶ Hess and Kaplan, *The Ungentlemanly Art*, 52.

⁷ *Ibid.*, 55.

⁸ *Ibid.*, 53.

⁹ *Ibid.*, 73.

¹⁰ *Ibid.*, 72.

¹¹ *Ibid.*, 89.

¹² *Ibid.*, 85.

¹³ J. Chal Vinson, *Thomas Nast: Political Cartoonist* (Athens: University of Georgia Press, 1967), 17-18.

¹⁴ Encyclopedia Britannica Online, "Photo Engraving," Accessed August 21, 2014, <http://www.britannica.com/EBchecked/topic/457873/photoengraving>

¹⁵ Hess and Kaplan, *The Ungentlemanly Art*, 119.

¹⁶ This is evidenced by the establishment of an editorial cartoonist category for the Pulitzer Prize.

¹⁷ Stephen Hess and Sandy Northrup, *Drawn & Quartered: The History of American Political Cartoons* (Montgomery, AL: Elliot & Clark Publishing, 1996), 115.

¹⁸ James Billington, *Herblock's History: Political Cartoons from the Crash to the Millennium* (Ann Arbor: University of Michigan Library, 2000), 8.

¹⁹ Jim McCloskey, e-mail interview by author, August 28, 2014.

²⁰ *Ibid.*

²¹ *Ibid.*

²² Jim McCloskey, e-mail interview by author, August 28, 2014.

²³ The Best Editorial Cartoons of the Year is an annual compilation of the most outstanding cartoons in the nation. The book has included the work of Pulitzer Prize winners and other members of the elite pantheon of editorial cartoonists. It most certainly is a very prestigious award.

²⁴ The Virginia Press Association hands out awards based on three categories: news, editorial, and advertising. The VPA represents the interests of newspapers around the state.

²⁵ Jim McCloskey, e-mail interview by author, August 28, 2014.

²⁶ *Ibid.*

²⁷ Jim McCloskey, e-mail interview by author, August 28, 2014.

²⁸ *Ibid.*



²⁹ Natalie Austin, "Morris Criticizes Editorial Cartoon," *News Leader*, July 9, 1992.

³⁰ Ibid.

³¹ Jim McCloskey, e-mail interview by author, August 28, 2014.

³² Raymond C. Robertson, *After Hours: The Story of Staunton, Virginia's Famous Obscenity Trial* (Staunton: Lot's Wife Publishing, 2010), 2.

³³ Robertson, *After Hours*, 19.

³⁴ Ibid., 27-29.

³⁵ Jim McCloskey, e-mail interview by author, August 28, 2014.

³⁶ Ibid.

³⁷ *News Leader*: A Gannett Company, "No Case Against Straight," Accessed 23, 2014, <http://www.newsleader.com/article/20050708/OPINION01/507080317/No-case-against-Straight>

³⁸ Jim McCloskey, e-mail interview by author, August 28, 2014.

³⁹ Ibid.

⁴⁰ Ibid.

⁴¹ Jim McCloskey, e-mail interview by author, August 28, 2014.



Augusta County Historical Society turns Fifty

Written and compiled by Nancy Sorrells

Editor's note: The year 2014 was celebrated as the fiftieth anniversary of the founding of the Augusta County Historical Society. The highlight of the year came on April 15, 2014, when the society hosted its Golden Gala, a giant birthday party at the Stonewall Jackson Hotel and Conference Center. During the evening, the crowd was entertained by six famous "visitors from the past" who had some local connection, albeit sometimes very brief, with the area. Actors dressed as Tallulah Bankhead, Charles Lindbergh, Juliette Gordon Low, Kate Smith, Patrick Henry, and Henry Ford, mingled with the crowd during the evening and were interviewed by local musician Richard Adams. Guests were invited to dress as characters from the past and a photo booth was available to take pictures and preserve the fun of the night for future generations. Short biographies of the six historic guests are contained in the article that follows.

During the year's celebration of the society's history, the organization's roots were researched and an article by Nancy Sorrells was written and published. That is reprinted here along with a list of the society's founders. During its golden anniversary year the society also unveiled a new logo designed by local graphic artist Jennifer Wood Monroe, and published a book of historic photographs of Augusta County.

Augusta County Historical Society launched in 1964

As 1964 dawned in Augusta County, a Presbyterian minister who also happened to be an amazing local historian, happened in the Augusta County courthouse searching for some elusive clues to the county's eighteenth-century origins. Aiding Dr. Howard McKnight Wilson in his work were fellow genealogists and historians Kelly Trimble, John Hale, and J.R. Hildebrand. As the four men worked they wondered aloud why Augusta County – arguably one of the most historic counties in the nation – did not have a historical society. After all, Rockbridge to the south and Rockingham to the north, both of which were carved out of Augusta, had active societies.

Lovers of local history will recognize the four men having this discussion. Trimble was a skilled genealogist, while both Hildebrand and Hale became known for their maps of early Augusta County. Of the four,



Fitzhugh Elder, Jr., left, William Purviance Tams, center, and Dr. Richard P. Bell III gather at the first meeting of the Augusta County Historical Society on November 9, 1964. Tams was the featured speaker at the meeting. (Photo from the ACHS Archives)

however, it is Wilson who gained the most lasting fame. Author of several history books and articles, he is best known for *Tinkling Spring: Headwater of Freedom*, an extensive history that details the settlement of colonial Augusta County. Wilson also single-handedly ensured the preservation of the area's Presbyterian heritage by traveling from church to church, loading up old records in a fireproof safe, transporting them to Richmond to be microfilmed and then returning them to their church home.

Dr. Wilson is also considered the father of the Augusta County Historical Society (ACHS). He quickly passed on the idea of organizing a society to his physician and friend, Dr. Richard Phillips Bell, III. Bell, with assistance from Wilson, wrote a letter to fifteen local people from Staunton, Waynesboro, and Augusta County whom they thought might have an interest in preserving the area's history and heritage.

On Friday February 21, 1964, a group of seventeen men and women met to discuss their interest "in preserving papers and artifacts of historical importance" and explore the idea of organizing a society. A committee headed by Dr. Wilson was formed to submit a slate of officers for such an organization and to draft a constitution and by-laws. In addition to Drs. Wilson and Bell, the group included Fitzhugh Elder, Jr., Mrs.



Beirne J. Kerr, Dr. Herbert S. Turner, Harry Nash, Dr. Patricia Menk, Maj. Gen. E. Walton Opie, and Mrs. Carter Loth.

Interestingly enough, the idea and eventual organization of the society became front page news every time progress was made toward the formation of the organization. Further, a reporter attended those meetings in order to report the details to the public. The main force that was driving these heritage-minded citizens was the loss of artifacts and papers from Augusta County's past. Dr. Wilson was quoted in the paper as saying that one of the reasons for the disappearance of early documents was the "tendency of young couples to live in apartments [that] has just about eliminated the traditional attic repository of family collections."

Reports of that first organizational meeting in February competed for space on the front page with continuing coverage of President Kennedy's assassination, a deadly Augusta County car crash, a discussion of British politics, U.S. relations with Mexico, Barry Goldwater's campaign, and a push to make sure everyone was immunized against polio. Pretty important company for a fledgling group!

The newspaper coverage drew a lot of local interest and the steering committee worked hard at organizing a society. In just over two months, all the details were in place and on May 7, 1964, the Augusta County Historical Society was born. Dr. Bell was named as the first president, while Harry Nash was vice-president and Elizabeth H. Perry was recording secretary. Mrs. R.M. Armistead was corresponding secretary, William Huffman was treasurer, Dr. Wilson was archivist, and Dr. Menk was associate archivist. On the first board were Dr. Samuel Spencer, Jr., Dr. Marshall Brice, Elder, Loth, Turner, and Kerr. The group adopted its constitution and by-laws and received a congratulatory communication from the Rockbridge Historical Society.

This time, the society not only graced the front page of *The Staunton Leader* – above the fold – with an article, but a photograph of Bell, Nash, and Wilson appeared as well. The society received even better newspaper coverage on Tuesday, November 10. The night before in Mary Baldwin's King Auditorium, Staunton native and West Virginia resident William Purviance Tams regaled the crowd with the history of Augusta County from the end of the ice age to the twentieth century. The crowd in attendance was close to two hundred. This time the article was the lead story with a sidebar detailing some of the first donations to the society's archives.

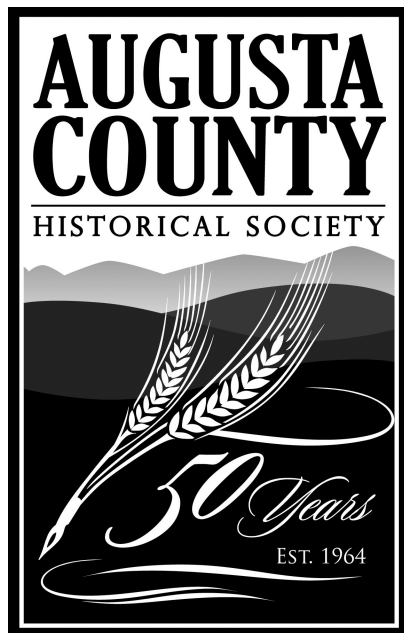
Tams' speech was published in the first *Augusta Historical Bulletin*, a society journal filled with research papers and speeches about the



history of Staunton, Waynesboro, and Augusta County. After fifty years of publication, that journal represents an important body of research material for those wanting to learn more about the area's heritage.

Readers will recognize many of those who were instrumental in establishing and growing the society. Two names probably rise to the top of that list. Katherine Bushman, a nationally known genealogist living in Staunton, edited the *Bulletin* for many years. Dick Hamrick, a local businessman interested in area history, served as society archivist. He was personally responsible for collecting and preserving in the society's collections thousands of documents and photographs. Today the society offers a research scholarship to students who write a paper drawn from one or more of the society's collections and have it published in the *Bulletin*. Bushman and Hamrick deservedly shared the first ever Distinguished Service Award given by the society.

From its earliest days, the society relied upon the hard work and good graces of members to store records, archives, and artifacts. In 1999, ACHS got its first home when the Augusta County Board of Supervisors provided space for a small office and archival storage in the government center in Verona. The move was designed as a transitional one until the 1890s railroad hotel on New Street in Staunton was restored. ACHS, along with Historic Staunton Foundation, and the Staunton Augusta Art Center, collaborated on a multi-million dollar restoration that brought that derelict building back to its original glory when T.J. Collins designed it.



New ACHS logo designed for the fiftieth anniversary by Jennifer Wood Monroe.



The building, now known as the R.R. Smith Center for History and Art, opened its doors in 2007. Today ACHS has a research library, a climate-controlled archives, and an office in the center. The first gallery in the Smith Center, known as the History Gallery, displays a variety of rotating exhibits organized by ACHS. The current exhibit, opening January 23, features a history of newspapers in Staunton. Prominently displayed, of course, will be the May 8, 1964, front page of *The Staunton Leader* – announcing the birth of the Augusta County Historical Society fifty years ago this spring.

Augusta County Historical Society founders, established 1964: Mary Armistead, Dr. Richard P. Bell III, Edward P. Berlin Jr., Dr. Marshall Brice, Katharine and William Bushman, Silva E. Clem, Fitzhugh Elder Jr., John Hall, Richard M. Hamrick, J.R. Hildebrand, Mr. and Mrs. O. Dayton Hodges, Mrs. M.C. (Jean) Hoffman, William Huffman, Beirne J. Kerr, Ann Loth, Dr. Patricia Menk, Harry L. Nash, Jr., Maj. Gen. E. Walton Opie, Elizabeth H. Perry, Virginia Rogers, Dr. Samuel R. Spencer Jr., Kelly Trimble, Dr. Herbert S. Turner, Mack Wampler, Dr. Howard M. Wilson, and J.B. Yount.

Visitors from the past

Tallulah Brockman Bankhead

January 31, 1902-December 12, 1968

Tallulah Bankhead was born into a prominent Alabama political family and was named after her paternal grandmother who had been named after the town of Tallulah Falls, Georgia. Her father, William Brockman, was a Democratic member of the House of Representatives and served as Speaker of the House. Her grandfather served in the Confederacy and later became a U.S. Senator. Other family members also distinguished themselves in political office.

Weeks after Tallulah's birth in Huntsville, Alabama, her mother Adelaide, or "Ada," died of blood poisoning, leaving her and sister, Eugenia with a distraught father who soon sent them to live with his parents in Georgia. They spent their early years living with either the grandparents or an aunt in Montgomery, Alabama. Tallulah was known at an early age for her theatrics, temper tantrums, and general exuberant behavior, nearly driving family members crazy.

Local connections

Both she and Eugenia ended up in a series of convent schools and



Patrick Henry, played by Brian Holsoapple; Kate Smith, played by Sherry Talbott; Charles Lindbergh played by Aaron Crosby, and Henry Ford, played by Bobby McAllister, were among the special guests at the Golden Gala.

when Tallulah was twelve, in 1913, both of them were enrolled in Mary Baldwin Seminary. The girls had a cousin, Marion, who attended the school, and enjoyed the company of the daughter of Senator Glass of Virginia. In her autobiography, Tallulah said that on weekends she and her sister would visit the home of Cordell Hull and were permitted to ride his Shetland ponies. Although both girls spent only a short time at Mary Baldwin before being sent to a convent in Washington, Tallulah did join a secret girls' society nicknamed "The Jugs."

At fifteen, Tallulah won a film magazine beauty contest and persuaded her family to allow her to go to New York and seek a career on stage. Initially she won small parts, but eventually her talent and totally uninhibited personality made her a Broadway star. She won critical acclaim for "The Little Foxes" (1939), and for "The Skin of Our Teeth" (1942). Although she was more comfortable on stage and did not care for Hollywood, she delivered her most memorable performance in Alfred Hitchcock's movie, "Lifeboat" (1944).

Tallulah attracted widespread attention wherever she went. When she walked into a room, all eyes and ears were focused on her flamboyant, raucous nature, her seductive voice, which called everyone "Daaahling," and witty expressions. Her many affairs (both sexes) were



notorious and she often bragged about her promiscuity. Eventually her lifestyle, drinking, and drugs caught up with her. She died in 1968 from a bout of double pneumonia. Both on stage and screen, Tallulah has remained a fascinating, unforgettable personality.

Patrick Henry

May 29, 1736-June 6, 1799

Born in Hanover County, Virginia, Patrick Henry was best known as an American Revolution orator whose passionate and fiery speeches made him a leader in the opposition against the British government. To call him a radical would be an understatement. His open defiance and radical views concerning British policy caused more tempered revolutionaries like Washington, Jefferson, and Franklin to shudder.

Early in his career, Patrick Henry studied the law, passing the bar exam after only a six-week course of study. He moved to Louisa County in 1764 where his oratory skills surfaced during his defense of broad voting rights before the House of Burgesses. In 1765 he was elected to the House of Burgesses and quickly became its most outspoken member. Henry eloquently argued for the passage of his proposals for the Virginia Stamp Act Resolutions, unnerving many of the more staid members of the House who considered his defiance of Great Britain to be tantamount to treason.

Henry was elected to the Continental Congress in 1774 where he continued to distinguish himself as a radical orator. In 1775 he served as Virginia's Militia Leader and led a fearless effort to preserve Virginia's gunpowder stores when the royal Governor, Lord Dunmore, attempted to sneak them aboard a British ship. Dunmore was forced to pay a fair price for the gunpowder.

As a forceful orator, Henry gave what is considered his most famous speech during the Virginia Convention in 1775. In response to the growing crisis with Britain, Henry proclaimed: "Almighty God! I know not what course others may take; but as for me, give me liberty, or give me death!"

Local connections

From 1776-1778, and again in 1784, Henry served as Governor of Virginia. During the dark days of the Revolutionary War, the Virginia State Legislature was forced by British troops to flee Richmond. Patrick Henry, Thomas Jefferson, Richard Henry Lee, Benjamin Harrison, and Thomas Nelson, Jr., barely escaped capture by Tarleton's troopers out-



side of Charlottesville thanks to the warning by militiaman Captain Jack Jouett, Virginia's answer to Paul Revere. Henry had just reached Staunton when he learned that Tarleton's troops were just over the Blue Ridge and it was Tarleton's plan to grab the Assembly in Staunton. The story goes that Henry fled in haste, losing one of his boots. He went first to the safety of Mt. Pleasant, near present-day Frank's Mill, where his kinsman by marriage, Col. George Moffett, had a secure house and possibly a cave on his property. The legend states that Moffett's wife, Sarah, did not recognize her own relative in his sorry disheveled state. Instead of being in the thick of the fight, he was forced to run for safety without a boot and arrived unrecognized and humiliated. Henry, apparently still without his boot, continued on toward Warm Springs through Deerfield on the Warm Springs Turnpike.

The British never appeared and the Virginia Assembly, including Henry, regrouped and convened at Augusta Parish Church (now Trinity Episcopal Church) using it as Virginia's capitol for seventeen days. The legislature elected a new governor during this time.

Always outspoken, Henry advocated for strong individual gun rights and a weak federal government. Initially, he did not support the Constitution because he felt it weakened states' rights, but finally agreed to accept it when the Bill of Rights was passed, a document for which he was largely responsible.

Charles Augustus Lindbergh

February 4, 1902-August 26, 1974

An aviator, inventor, author, and social activist, Charles Lindbergh is best known for being the first aviator to fly a solo, nonstop flight across the Atlantic, and did so on May 20-21, 1927. Although other pilots had gone before him, Lindbergh was the first to fly alone, nonstop. Instantly, the shy, slender man of twenty-five became an international hero, winning unprecedented fame and glory for his dangerous feat. Nicknames like "Lucky Lindy" and "The Lone Eagle" were used to characterize his aviation achievement, filling every newspaper and radio broadcast for months afterward. Idolized like no one before him, Lindbergh was honored throughout the world.

Charles Lindbergh was born in Detroit, but spent his youth on a farm near Little Falls, Minnesota. His parents were Swedish immigrants. His father, Charles Augustus Lindbergh, Sr., practiced law and served as a U.S. congressman from Minnesota from 1907-1917. At eighteen,



young Lindbergh entered the University of Wisconsin to study engineering, demonstrating a keen aptitude, but it was the love of flight that fascinated him. He turned to barnstorming after two years of college, performing dangerous stunts at county fairs. In 1924, he entered the U.S. Army to train as an Air Service Reserve pilot. By the time he completed his training, his skills as a pilot were already well known and he was hired to fly a mail route between St. Louis and Chicago.

In 1927, Lindbergh decided to compete for the \$25,000 Orteig Prize to be the first to fly from New York to Paris. Offered as early as 1919, others had been seriously injured or died in the attempt to make the flight. With the help of Ryan Aeronautical, a small aircraft company in San Diego, they built a unique plane that would come to be known as "The Spirit of St. Louis." From there, Lindbergh flew to St. Louis and to New York.

Local connections

Following Lindbergh's entrance into aviation history, the months of constantly being in the public eye took their toll. There were times Lindbergh just needed to get away. One of these took place on November 17, 1927, when he flew a Fairchild Monoplane with Virginia Governor Harry Bird to "Lebanon" farm in Augusta County owned by Campbell and William Pancake. White bed sheets were used by the Chamber of Commerce to mark the landing field. Hugh Sproul (grandfather of Staunton resident, Hugh Sproul) took them to his hunting camp in the Deerfield Valley where they hunted pheasant. A dinner planned by Sproul included his four children, Harriett, Eugenia, Hugh Jr., and Erskine.

Lindbergh's later life was characterized by both tragedy and criticism. Following his marriage in 1929 to Anne Morrow, they had a son, Charles Augustus Lindbergh, Jr., who was kidnapped at twenty months from his home and brutally murdered. The press billed this horrific incident as "The Crime of the Century." Later, Lindbergh would come under scrutiny for his outspoken beliefs about noninvolvement in World War II. For years after, he avoided public attention, but finally took the conservation of natural resources as a cause during the 1960s. He died in Hawaii of cancer in 1974.

Juliette "Daisy" Magill Kinzie Gordon Low

October 31, 1860-January 17, 1927

Juliette Gordon Low, affectionately called Daisy, was the second of six children, from a family in Savannah, Ga. As a child Daisy developed



a love of the arts and a love of animals, two interests that continued throughout her life.

Local connections

In the fall of 1874 when she was thirteen, Daisy and her older sister Eleanor (Nell) began attending the Virginia Female Institute (now Stuart Hall) in Staunton. Daisy enjoyed Stuart Hall and through her letters home, she reported on the many activities that she and her sister participated in. In the classroom, Daisy earned medals in English, French, piano, elocution, and drawing. She noted in one letter home that "...we have to study so hard and Oh they are so strick, [sic] that we have very little play at all." Not entirely true as we know the girls also participated in school masquerade balls, went sleigh riding, ice skating, and made snowmen. Daisy was very athletic, participating in tennis, rowing, and later canoeing. She stood on her head every year long into adulthood on her birthday as well as those of her nieces and nephew just to prove that she could do it.

After Stuart Hall, Daisy spent a year at Mesdemoiselles Charbonnier's finishing school in New York City where the girls were required to speak only French. She then returned home as a popular Southern belle. At the age of twenty-six she married the son of a wealthy cotton merchant, Willy Low. The Lows, who had no children, divided their time between Savannah, England, and Scotland. Daisy was presented to Queen Victoria in 1889.

The Low marriage was not a happy one. Additionally Daisy was almost completely deaf, losing the hearing in one ear because of a childhood infection and the other after a grain of rice thrown at her wedding became lodged in her ear and caused an infection. Despite these issues, Daisy was always upbeat and turned to the arts where she became quite an accomplished sculptor although she also dabbled in ironwork, wood carving, and painting.

Daisy and Willy separated in 1901 and he passed away in a mental hospital in 1905. Daisy dove deeply into her sculpture and soon met a man named General Sir Robert Baden-Powell. The two shared many interests, and he encouraged Daisy to start a Girl Guides movement similar to the Boy Scouts organization that he had founded. Not long after that she took his advice and organized a seven-girl patrol in Scotland where she was living at the time. In March 1912 she started the first Girl Guides patrols (The name was changed to Girl Scouts the following year.) in America and her niece became the first American Girl Scout in the newly



formed eighteen-girl troop in Savannah. The growth of the Girl Scouts was swift. She brought girls from all backgrounds together, teaching them how to enjoy the outdoors, be self-reliant, and resourceful. She encouraged homemaking, professional training, and citizenship. Today there are 3.7 million members and over the last century more than fifty-nine million people have been members.

Low died of breast cancer in 1927, but not before becoming nationally known as the beloved leader of the Girl Scouts. Today her childhood home in Savannah has been restored and is on the National Register of Historic Places. It is the Girl Scout National Center.

Kathryn “Kate” Elizabeth Smith

May 1, 1907-June 17, 1986

Kate Smith, the “Songbird of the South” was one of the best known singers in twentieth-century America. She had a radio, television, recording, and even a movie career that spanned more than five decades. At the time of her death in Raleigh, N.C., she had recorded over 3,000 songs, six hundred or so of which made the hit parade. She had also made more than 15,000 radio broadcasts and had received more than twenty-five million fan letters.

Local connections

The record must be set straight on one thing – Kate was born at home in Washington, D.C., on May 1, 1907. After she became famous as the Songbird of the South she began claiming, even on national television, that Greenville, Va., was her birthplace. This is absolutely not true. However, she did not just randomly pick Greenville. Kate’s father owned the Capitol News Company in D.C. and sold newspapers and magazines. When Kate was ten, a young man from Greenville named Hugh Melton came to work at the Justice Department near Capitol News. The twenty-five-year-old bought a paper and asked Kate’s father if he knew where there was a room to rent. Uncle Hughie, as he came to be called, rented a room from the Smiths for several years and maintained a long-time friendship with the family. The Meltons actually ran a hotel in Greenville and Kate visited often in the summer. Just north of the village, where the Pilot gas station is today, stood a Howard Johnson restaurant known for its all-you-could eat clam dinners and the many flavors of ice cream. Kate always had the clam plate and three or four scoops of different ice creams. She would buy little jars of ice cream topping with the ice cream and used her finger to get the toppings out of the jar.



Kate had no professional vocal training. In fact she did not even speak until she was three at which time, she suddenly burst into song. She apparently never stopped. She always enjoyed singing and dancing at local theaters and was featured in a musical Broadway comedy in NYC in 1926 before she was twenty. Columbia Records discovered her in 1930 and she had broken into radio by 1931. Although her first movie came in 1932, it was when she sang Irving Berlin's "God Bless America" in the 1943 movie, *This is the Army*, that she gained lasting fame. For a time, Kate Smith had exclusive rights to perform "God Bless America" in public. She and Berlin waived all royalties to the song, and gave any royalties to the Boy and Girl Scouts of America. Among her biggest musical hits were "River, Stay 'Way From My Door," "The Woodpecker Song," "The White Cliffs of Dover," "I Don't Want to Walk Without You," "There Goes That Song Again," "Seems Like Old Times," and "Now Is the Hour." She helped write her own theme song, When the Moon Comes over the Mountain. She always began her shows with "Hello Everybody" and ended with "Thanks for listening."

In her later years she became the good luck charm for the Philadelphia Flyers hockey team where she sang God Bless America in lieu of the national anthem. The last song she sang in public was God Bless America on a bicentennial special just before July 4, 1976. She died in Raleigh ten years later.

Henry Ford

July 30, 1863-April 7, 1947

Probably no single person is more closely associated with America's love for the automobile than Henry Ford. But Ford did not invent the automobile or even the assembly line; rather he was an innovator, an entrepreneur, and a good businessman. His Ford Model T automobile and the assembly line work force that mass produced it changed American industry and American society because of his desire to produce an inexpensive "motorcar for the great multitude." Although this Michigan farm boy had keen engineering and mechanical abilities, Ford's genius was in perfecting an automobile assembly line that relentlessly increased production, lowered costs, and stabilized the workforce by doubling workers' wages to five dollars a day. It was a bold move, making him a household name and one of the richest men in America.

In the end, his influence faded mostly because of his autocratic control of the business, but by then his work was done. With the auto-



mobile business firmly established, Ford's interests strayed elsewhere. He dabbled in the new airline industry, making a small but significant impact there. Interestingly enough the man who had launched America on its course of urbanization and industry, grew nostalgic in his later years and began collecting objects of America's rural past—wagons, threshing machines, and even buildings from a by-gone era—that are today housed in the Greenfield Village Museum. During WW I, Ford led a doomed peace effort by chartering a Peace Ship in 1915 and sailing across the ocean to halt the war.

Local connections

Ford was born on a farm in Michigan and died in Dearborn at the age of eighty-three. So what is Ford's connection to the Shenandoah Valley? Henry Ford was a Vagabond...that is with a capital "V". Despite spending his adult life in factories, Henry Ford loved the outdoors. From 1913 to 1924, Ford, fellow industrialists Thomas Edison and Harvey Firestone, as well as poet and naturalist John Burroughs took annual two-week camping trips to beautiful places along the East Coast. They called themselves "the Vagabonds" and their "luxurious" camping trips were usually accompanied by large quantities of supplies and attendants, photographers, and plenty of press. Other famous people, including several U.S. Presidents, often joined the group for a day or two.

Ford apparently quite enjoyed these opportunities to reconnect with nature and his rural roots. During these trips he was always active, out observing nature, exploring the area, and collecting wood. In August of 1918 the Vagabonds chose the Shenandoah Valley for their excursion, details of which appeared in the *Staunton Daily News Leader* on Sunday, September 1 under the headlines: "Henry Ford and his Party of Famous Men in Staunton." According to the newspaper account, Ford and Edison stopped for a few minutes at Harry Hogshead's Drug Store on West Beverley, drank some lemonades, and answered a few questions. Ford then told those gathered that he was starting to manufacture tractors and that he hoped to produce ten million of them. He also told those in the store how impressed his group was with the beauty of the Shenandoah Valley.

Soon thereafter, the pair left the store, got in their car, and drove away. The newspaper concluded "...and the last seen of the famous party was the silver gray head of the man who revolutionized motor travel in this country." Although not included in the written account, local lore remembers that the Vagabonds stopped at a roadside stand



on North Augusta Street about a block north of Tams Street and bought some grapes before heading to Hogshead's.

SIX DEGREES OF SEPARATION

(Or Connecting our six historical characters)

When **Patrick Henry** and the Virginia General Assembly fled from Staunton to Warm Springs Virginia in 1781, many of them, including Henry, traveled the Warm Springs Turnpike through Deerfield, Va.

When **Charles Lindbergh** landed his plane for a getaway hunting trip in Augusta County he landed in a field in a farm in Deerfield, Va.

Charles Lindbergh was born in Michigan and had quite a bit of mechanical aptitude. Another famous Michigan man with a good bit of mechanical ability and a personal friend of Lindbergh's was a man named **Henry Ford**.

Henry Ford enjoyed camping and he and several other famous men, known as The Vagabonds, took trips through scenic places along the East Coast each year.

In 1918 the men stopped in Staunton, Va. Staunton was where **Juliette Gordon Low** went to school at what is now Stuart Hall. She went on to found the Girls Scouts, an organization that helped girls learn about nature by going outside and camping.

The 100th anniversary of the founding of the Girl Scouts of America was celebrated at the Ford Museum in Dearborn, Michigan.

One of America's most popular patriotic songs, God Bless America, was written by Irvin Berlin and performed exclusively for many years by **Kate Smith**, the Songbird of the South. Smith and Berlin, recognized that the song belonged to America and waived all royalties. Any royalties that came went to the Girl Scouts of America (and the Boy Scouts).

Although **Kate Smith** claimed she was born in Greenville, Va., she was actually born in Washington, D.C.

On the corner of Connecticut Ave and Q Street in Washington, D.C. is the Anchorage Building. It has been home to both **Charles Lindbergh** and **Tallulah Bankhead**. **Tallulah Bankhead**, who along with her sister, attended Mary Baldwin Seminary, once hosted a radio show called "The Big Show" and she sang the song "May the Good Lord Bless and Keep You" as the closing theme for each show.

Later **Kate Smith** closed her TV show "The Kate Smith Evening Hour" with the same song.

More cool connections: **Tallulah Bankhead** held her wedding re-



ception in a ritzy hotel in Birmingham Alabama. **Charles Lindbergh** held a press conference at the same hotel.

Do YOU remember, in 1964...?

Yearly income... \$5,880

Gallon of gas... 25 cents

Gallon of milk... \$1.06

Loaf of bread... 21 cents

Postage stamp... 5 cents

Life magazine... 35 cents or \$5.00 for the year

GE dryer... \$99.95

Emerson 11-inch television (black and white of course) ...
\$139.95

Popular television shows "Bewitched," "Addams Family,"
"Flipper," "Man from UNCLE," "Munsters," "Gomer Pyle"

Popular music "Baby Love" by the Supremes; Also

"Pretty Woman," "Ragdoll," "I want to hold your hand"

Popular movies "Mary Poppins," "My Fair Lady,"
"Goldfinger"



General Philip Sheridan's Commentary on the Battle of Waynesboro and the End of the Valley Campaign in 1865

By Daniel A. Métraux

Much has been written in this journal about Staunton and the Civil War including the ill-fated Battle of Waynesboro of March 1-2, 1865, which marked the end of the fighting in the Shenandoah Valley. Nevertheless, it is interesting to read the words of General Sheridan, commander of Union forces during the final Valley Campaign.

Philip Henry Sheridan (1831-1888) was one of the most successful Union generals during the Civil War. Born in Albany New York and raised in Ohio, he graduated from West Point in 1853 and became a career officer in the U.S. Army. Sheridan spent the early years of the Civil War commanding an infantry division in Tennessee and elsewhere in the Western Theater. His aggressive tactics and many victories won him the favorable attention of General Grant. When Grant assumed control of all Union armies in early 1864, he selected Sheridan as his cavalry commander and brought him to the Eastern Front.

Grant, well aware of the vital role that the Shenandoah Valley played in feeding the Confederate military, ordered Sheridan and his troops to invade the Valley in the summer of 1864. Sheridan's successful Shenandoah Valley Campaign led to the eventual defeat of Confederate General Jubal Early's (1816-1894) cavalry as well as the mass destruction of the South's food supply. Sheridan's scorched earth tactics, known as "The Burning" by Valley farmers, played a key role in reducing the Confederacy's ability to wage war. Sheridan won a key victory at the Battle of Cedar Creek south of Winchester in October, 1864. While he was treated as a military hero in the North—there is a statue and small park dedicated to Sheridan in Greenwich Village very close to where I grew up in New York City — Sheridan remains deeply reviled in the Shenandoah Valley to this very day.

Despite his defeat at Cedar Creek, the remnants of Early's army survived and maintained a presence in southern portions of the Valley



throughout the winter of 1864-1865. Late in the winter Grant ordered Sheridan to initiate a military campaign to destroy the Virginia Central Railroad and the James River Canal in southwestern Virginia, then to seize Lynchburg, and finally to join General Sherman's forces then campaigning in North Carolina. But as Sheridan moved up the Valley towards Staunton, Early sent a cavalry force under General Thomas Rosser (1836-1910) to block Union forces. Rosser set fire to a bridge on the middle fork of the Shenandoah River, but Union General George A. Custer (1839-1876), who was leading advanced units of Sheridan's force, quickly extinguished the flames. Union forces, numbering about 5,000, then found the bulk of Early's army entrenched on a ridge near the town of Waynesboro. Union troops quickly overwhelmed the Confederates, though Early and part of his staff escaped over the Blue Ridge Mountains.

Sheridan's victory on 2 March 1865 at Waynesboro effectively ended any Confederate presence in the Valley. Sheridan then moved on to Charlottesville and joined Grant's final Appomattox campaign that led to General Lee's surrender in early April, 1865.

Sheridan continued his military career after the Civil War in the West where his forces fought brutal campaigns against Native Americans. He also participated in the campaign to preserve the majestic lands that in 1872 became Yellowstone National Park. He suffered several heart attacks in the late 1880s before his death in 1888.

Before his death Sheridan wrote his autobiography, *Personal Memoirs of P. H. Sheridan*, a two volume work published in 1888.¹ The following excerpt, taken pages 110-118 of Volume II, detail Sheridan's encounter with Early's forces in Staunton and Waynesboro on 1-2 March, 1865.

He begins the narrative quoted here by describing how in February, 1865, a man named Lomas from Maryland approached him in Winchester offering his services as a spy because of his supposed ties with ranking Confederates. Sheridan believed that Lomas was in fact a Confederate spy, but he reluctantly employed him thinking he might be useful. Lomas later introduced Sheridan to another young Southerner who gave his name as Renfrew. Although suspicious of Renfrew as well, Sheridan sent both on mission to go behind Confederate lines and had them tailed. Later Sheridan presumes that Renfrew was none other than John Wilkes Booth himself! Sheridan states what happened next:

On the 16 of February they [Lomas and Renfrew] returned to Win-



chester, and reported their failure [to penetrate Confederate lines], telling so many lies about their hazardous adventure as to remove all remaining doubt as to their double-dealing. Unquestionably they were spies from the enemy, and hence liable to the penalties of such service; but it struck me that through them I might deceive Early as to the time of opening the spring campaign, I having already received from General Grant an intimation of what was expected of me. I therefore retained the men without even a suggestion of my knowledge of their character, Young² meanwhile keeping close watch over all their doings.

Toward the end of February [1865] General Early had at Staunton two brigades of infantry under Wharton.³ All of the rest of the infantry except Echols' brigade⁴, which was in southwestern Virginia, had been sent to Petersburg during the winter, and Fitz Lee's⁵ two brigades of cavalry also. Rosser's⁶ men were mostly at their homes, where, on account of lack of subsistence and forage in the valley, they had been permitted to go, subject to call. Lomax's⁷ cavalry was at Millboro', west of Staunton, where supplies were obtainable. It was my aim to get well on the road before Early could collect these scattered forces, and as many of the officers had been in the habit of amusing themselves fox-hunting during the latter part of the winter, I decided to use the hunt as an expedient for stealing a march on the enemy, and had it given out officially that a grand fox-chase would take place on the 29th of February. Knowing that Lomas and Renfrew⁸ would spread the announcement South, they were permitted to see several red foxes that had been secured, as well as a large pack of hounds which Colonel Young⁹ had collected for the sport, and then were started on a second expedition to burn the bridges. Of course, they were shadowed as usual, and two days later, after they had communicated with friends from their hiding place in Newtown, they were arrested. On the way north to Fort Warren¹⁰ they escaped from their guards when passing through Baltimore, and I never heard of them again, though I learned that, after the assassination of Mr. Lincoln, Secretary [of War] Stanton strongly suspected his friend Lomas of being associated with the conspirators, and it then occurred to me that the good-looking Renfrew may have been Wilkes Booth, for he certainly bore a strong resemblance to Booth's pictures.

On the 27th of February my cavalry entered on the campaign which cleared the Shenandoah Valley of every remnant of organized Confederates. General Torbert¹¹ being absent on leave at this time, I did not recall him, but appointed General Merritt¹² Chief of Cavalry, for



Torbert had disappointed me on two important occasions — in the Luray Valley during the battle of Fisher's Hill, and on the recent Gordonsville expedition—and I mistrusted his ability to conduct any operations requiring much self-reliance. The column was composed of Custer's and Devin's¹³ divisions of cavalry, and two sections of artillery, comprising in all about 10,000 officers and men. On wheels we had, to accompany this column, eight ambulances, sixteen ammunition wagons, a pontoon train for eight canvas boats, and a small supply train, with fifteen days' rations of coffee, sugar and salt, it being intended to depend on the country for the meat and bread ration, the men carrying in their haversacks nearly enough to subsist them till out of the exhausted valley.

Grant's orders were for me to destroy the Virginia Central railroad and the James River canal, capture Lynchburg if practicable, and then join General Sherman in North Carolina, wherever he might be found, or return to Winchester, but as to joining Sherman, I was governed by the state of affairs after the projected capture of Lynchburg. The weather was cold, the valley and surrounding mountains being still covered with snow; but this was fast disappearing, however, under the heavy rain that was coming down as the column moved up the Valley pike at a steady gait that took us to Woodstock the first day. The second day we crossed the North Fork of the Shenandoah on our pontoon bridge, and by nightfall reached Lacy's Springs, having seen nothing of the enemy as yet but a few partisans who hung on our flanks in the afternoon.

March 1 we encountered General Rosser at Mt. Crawford, he having been able to call together only some five or six hundred of his troops, our unsuspected march becoming known to Early only the day before. Rosser attempted to delay us here, trying to burn the bridges over the Middle Fork of the Shenandoah, but two regiments from Colonel Capehart's¹⁴ brigade swam the stream and drove Rosser to Kline's Mills, taking thirty prisoners and twenty ambulances and wagons.

Meanwhile General Early was busy at Staunton, but not knowing my objective point, he had ordered the return of Echols' brigade from southwestern Virginia for the protection of Lynchburg, directed Lomax's cavalry to concentrate at Pond Gap for the purpose of harassing me if I moved toward Lynchburg, and at the same time marched Wharton's two brigades of infantry, Nelson's artillery, and Rosser's cavalry to Waynesboro', whither he went also to remain till the object of my movement was ascertained.

I entered Staunton the morning of March 2, and finding that Early



had gone to Waynesboro' with his infantry and Rosser, the question at once arose whether I should continue my march to Lynchburg direct, leaving my adversary in my rear, or turn east and open the way through Rockfish Gap to the Virginia Central Railroad and James River canal. I felt confident of the success of the latter plan, for I knew that Early numbered there not more than two thousand men; so, influenced by this, and somewhat also by the fact that Early had left word in Staunton that he would fight at Waynesboro', I directed Merritt to move toward that place with Custer, to be closely followed by Devin, who was to detach one brigade to destroy supplies at Swoope's depot. The by-roads were miry beyond description, rain having fallen almost incessantly since we left Winchester, but not withstanding the down-pour the column pushed on, men and horses almost unrecognizable from the mud covering them from head to foot.

General Early was true to the promise made his friends in Staunton, for when Custer neared Waynesboro' he found, occupying a line of breastworks on the ridge, two brigades of infantry, with 11 pieces of artillery and Rosser's cavalry. Custer, when developing the position of the Confederates, discovered that their left was somewhat exposed instead of resting on South River; he therefore made his dispositions for attack, sending around that flank the dismounted regiments from Pennington¹⁵'s brigade, while he himself, with two brigades, partly mounted and partly dismounted, assaulted along the whole line of breastworks. Pennington's flanking movement stampeded the enemy in short order, thus enabling Custer to carry the front with little resistance, and as he did so the Eighth New York and First Connecticut, in a charge in column, broke through the opening made by Custer, and continued on through the town of Waynesboro', never stopping till they crossed South River. There, finding themselves immediately in the enemy's rear, they promptly formed as foragers and held the east bank of the stream till all the Confederates surrendered except Rosser, who succeeded in making his way back to the valley, and Generals Early, Wharton, Long¹⁶ and Lilley, who, with 15 or 20 men, escaped across the Blue Ridge. I followed up the victory immediately by dispatching Capehart through Rockfish Gap, with orders to encamp on the east side of the Blue Ridge. By reason of this move, all of the enemy's stores and transportation fell into our hands, while we captured on the field 17 battle flags, sixteen hundred officers and men, and 11 pieces of artillery. This decisive victory closed hostilities in the Shenandoah Valley.



The prisoners and artillery were sent back to Winchester next morning, under a guard of 1,500 men, commanded by Col. J. H. Thompson, of the First New Hampshire.¹⁷

The night of March 2 Custer camped at Brookfield, Devin remaining at Waynesboro'. The former started for Charlottesville the next morning early, followed by Devin with but 2 brigades, Gibbs¹⁸ having been left behind to blow up the iron railroad bridge across South River. Because of the incessant rains and spring thaws the roads were very soft. And the columns cut them up terribly, the mud being cut by the sets of fours across the road in ridges as much as two feet high, making it most difficult to get our wagons along, and distressingly wearing on the animals toward the middle and rear of the columns. Consequently, I concluded to rest at Charlottesville for a couple of days and recuperate a little, intending at the same time to destroy, with small parties, the railroad from that point toward Lynchburg. Custer reached Charlottesville the 3d, in the afternoon, and was met at the outskirts by a deputation of its citizens, headed by the mayor, who surrendered the town with medieval ceremony, formally handing over the keys of the public buildings and of the University of Virginia....

[Sheridan also went to Charlottesville and then headed south through Amherst Court House on his way in the direction of Lynchburg. His goal was to cross the James River at some point east of Lynchburg in order to make his way to Appomattox Court House in order to destroy the Southside Railroad as far east as Farmville, but due to the swollen condition of the river because of spring run off and because Confederates had burned all the bridges by the river, Sheridan gave up his intended rendezvous with General Sherman. Instead Sheridan decided to join up with Grant, which allowed him to participate in the final destruction and eventual surrender of Lee's Army of Northern Virginia at Appomattox a month later.]

Endnotes

¹ Philip H. Sheridan, *Personal Memoirs of P. H. Sheridan, General United States Army*. New York: Charles L. Webster & Company, 1888. Two Volumes.

² Major H. K. Young, Union chief of scouts in the Shenandoah campaign.

³ Gabriel C. Wharton (1824-1906) was a Confederate general and civil engineer.

⁴ John Echols (1823-1896), a Confederate general during the Civil War, died in Staunton.

⁵ Fitzhugh Lee (1835-1905), nephew of Robert E. Lee, was a Confederate cavalry general and later the 40th Governor of Virginia and a U.S. Army general in the Spanish and American War.

⁶ Thomas L. Rosser (1836-1910) was a Confederate general and cavalry officer. He later served as an officer in the Spanish-American War.

⁷ Lunsford L. Lomax (1835-1917) was a Confederate general based in Virginia.

⁸ Lomas and Renfrew were two southern men who presented themselves to Sheridan in



early 1865 offering to work as spies on behalf of Union forces and insisting that they had been confidants of Confederate General Mosby. Sheridan, suspicious to the end, warily accepted their services, though he refers to them as “pseudo-spies.”. See Sheridan, Vol. II, 109-111.

⁹ Henry Harrison Young (1841-1866) was known as an American Civil War spy for the Union and an aide to General Sheridan.

¹⁰ Fort Warren was a Union fort and POW camp in on Georges Island in Boston Harbor.

¹¹ Alfred T. A. Tolbert (1833-1880) was a Union general commanding both infantry and cavalry forces throughout the Civil War.

¹² Wesley Merritt (1836-1910) was a US Army general in both the Civil War and Spanish American War. He was very active in the 1864 Valley campaign.

¹³ Thomas Devin (1822-1878) served as a Major General and cavalry officer throughout the Civil War.

¹⁴ Col. H. Capehart became a Brigadier-General at the end of the War.

¹⁵ Col. A. C. M. Pennington of the New Jersey Cavalry.

¹⁶ Lt. Col. John S. Long, a member of Early's staff.

¹⁷ Commenting on a passage composed by General Grant on the battle of Waynesboro, General Early responded:

Grant, in speaking of this affair, says, “He [Sheridan] entered Staunton on the 2nd [of March, 1865], the enemy having retreated to Waynesboro. Thence he pushed on to Waynesboro, where he found the enemy in force in an entrenched position, under General Early. Without stopping to make a reconnaissance, an immediate attack was made, the position was carried, and 1,000 prisoners, eleven pieces of artillery, with horses and caissons complete, 200 waggons and teams loaded with substance, and 17 battle-flags were captured.” This is brilliant; but unfortunately for its truth, Sheridan was not at Waynesboro, but was at Staunton, where he had stopped with part of his force; while the affair at Waynesboro was conducted by one of his subordinates....[My force]...was not in an entrenched position. I am not able to say how many prisoners were taken, but I know that there were more than my command numbered, as a considerable number of newly exchanged and paroled prisoners were at that time in the Valley. I not only did not have 200 wagons or anything like it, but had no use for them. Where the 17 battle-flags could have been gotten, I cannot imagine.

Source: Jubal Anderson Early, *A Memoir of the Last Year of the War for Independence*. Lynchburg: Charles W. Button, 1867, 126.

¹⁸ Union General Alfred Gibbs (1823-1868).



Booker T. Washington High School Staunton, Va.

Nancy T. Sorrells (historical description)
Frazier Associates (architectural description)

Editor's Note: In the spring of 2014, the Virginia Department of Historic Resources approved the placement of Staunton's African-American high school, Booker T. Washington, on the Virginia Registry of Historic Places. That automatically placed the school on the U.S. Department of Interior's National Register of Historic Places as well. The register nomination was completed and submitted by Frazier Associates Architects of Staunton. Nancy Sorrells did the historic significance portion of the application, while the team at Frazier Associates provided the architectural description. Funding for the application process was provided by the Community Foundation of the Central Blue Ridge through the use of the Rita Wilson Fund. The narrative of significance and some of the architectural description from the application is below.

The Booker T. Washington High School is locally significant under Criterion A for Education and Ethnic Heritage: African American for its association with the cultural and educational patterns that have made a significant contribution to the African American history of Staunton. It operated as the only African American high school in the Staunton area from 1936 to 1966. Outside of strictly educational functions, the building served as a public meeting space for the African American community during the era of segregation. The school is also a source of pride in the African American community for the supportive and formative role that it played in many individuals' lives. It was named for Booker Taliaferro Washington (April 5, 1856-November 14, 1915), a man born into slavery, who later became a great American educator and civil rights leader.

Also locally significant under Criterion A in Social History, "the new high school gave the black community of Staunton, which had been denied access to public places for social activities, its own space to collectively organize and to hold fundraisers and other events."¹ Within



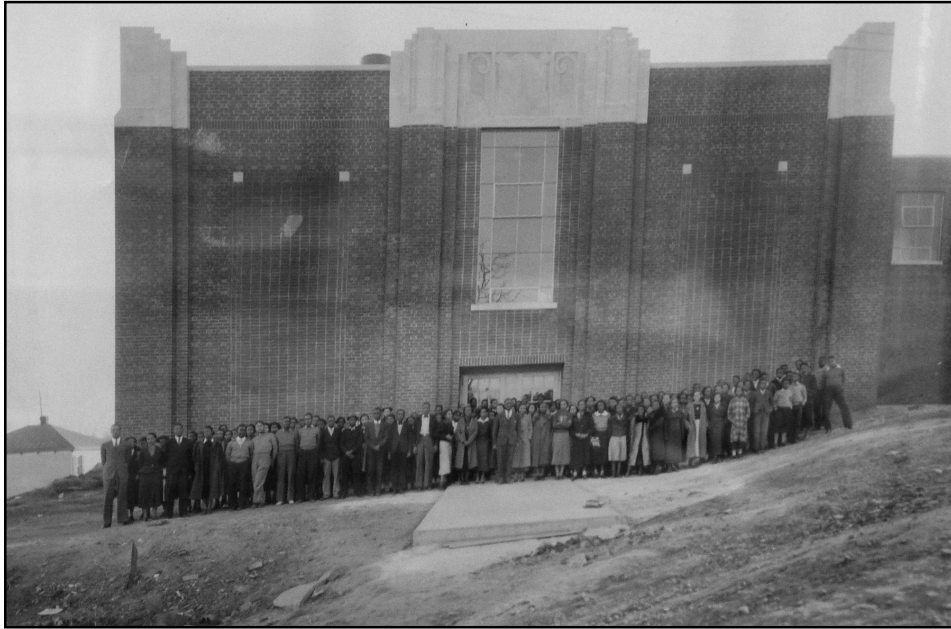
weeks of the school's opening in late 1936, African American community groups were petitioning the Staunton School Board to use the space during non-school time. The interest was such that a fee structure for outside use had to be immediately established. During segregation, the school library also doubled as the community's public library, adult night classes were held at the school and adult recreational athletic teams used the gymnasium.² As the Civil Rights movement grew in the South, the school was used as the site of voter registration in March 1960, as reported in the school board minutes and the Staunton newspaper.

The Booker T. Washington High School is locally significant under Criterion C in Architecture as a notable example of a local school designed in the Art Deco style that retains much of its original fabric from its 1936 construction date. It is the only local school designed in this new aesthetic for its era and one of the very few buildings in the region that was executed in the Art Deco style, popular in the period between the two World Wars. The school was designed by Richmond architect Raymond V. Long who was the Supervisor of School Buildings for the State Department of Education when he executed this design. It is sited on a sloping 2.3-acre parcel and is surrounded by the West Johnson Street neighborhood that overlooks Staunton's historic downtown and the Blue Ridge Mountains beyond. The school's period of significance dates from 1936 when it was constructed through 1966 when it closed with the integration of the local school system.

Narrative Statement of Significance

From the end of the Civil War until the desegregation of Staunton Public Schools in 1966, there have been at least thirteen African American schools in Staunton. Although the schools were funded at lower levels than the city's white schools, the quality of the African American education received by Staunton's students during that era produced a number of prominent educators as well as business and government leaders. Further, the reputation for providing a good education in Staunton was such that African American families living outside the city, in Augusta County and in Highland County, sent their children into Staunton to live and work in order to receive a better education.³

That was particularly true of junior high school and high school educational training that was absent in Augusta County until fairly late in the era of segregated schooling. Staunton, however, had two new African American schools, D. Webster Davis and Booker T. Washington



The student body and administration stands in front of the school entrance in this undated photo. (Courtesy Booker T. Washington alumni room)

(now the current Booker T. Washington Community Center), by World War I. They were located in the Sunnyside section of the city.

By the 1920s, the disparity between the educational infrastructure of Staunton's black and white schools was widening, and the parents and leaders in the African American community continued to push for better opportunities for their children. After a committee of parents requested that the school board provide industrial education classes and a four-year high school curriculum in the African American school, the request was granted provided the parents could raise the money for any extra equipment that would be needed.⁴

More and more efforts focused on improvements to the schools and in 1930 the Community League of the Colored Schools presented a petition that one or both of the black schools be enlarged. A receptive school board granted minor improvements, but the band-aid efforts were not enough. By late 1933, the problem of overcrowding at the schools was discussed.⁵

The tide shifted in January 1934 when the possibility presented itself for some federal funding through U.S. President Franklin Roosevelt's Civil Works Administration (CWA). The Great Depression-era stimulus



program would provide two “colored” school projects and one white vocational training project. Over the next year, Staunton weighed the options now made possible by the potential of CWA funds. By 1935 the city was looking at options for a new black school building at a different site. As momentum built, the school board settled on a group of lots several blocks west of downtown Staunton on Richardson and Reservoir Streets near the C&O railroad.

In the spring, the school board requested that the city council make available \$12,000 to purchase the land. By 1959 the footprint for the Booker T. Washington School consisted of lots 74, 75, 76, 88, 90, 92, 94, and 95 of the Richardson Extension of the Bagby Plat, but this initial project required just four of those eight lots.⁶

Armed with a time limit on securing the CWA monies and an argument of potential “injustice to Negro children” if a new school was not built, the Staunton school board pushed the city council to move ahead on the project. If the CWA money was lost due to inaction, the city would not be able to afford a new African American school, warned the school board.⁷

City Council unanimously voted to finance its portion of the project on October 21, 1935, and by the end of the month three lots had been procured in addition to the old reservoir lot that the City already owned off of West Johnson Street.⁸

Architectural Significance

The Booker T. Washington High School is significant architecturally since it is a notable example of a local school designed in the Art Deco style that retains much of its original fabric from its 1936 construction date. It is the only local school designed in this new aesthetic for its era and one of the very few buildings in the region that was executed in the Art Deco style, popular in the period between the two World Wars.

The Art Deco style strove for modernity and was influenced by the Modern art movements. It also took ideas from the ancient geometrical design styles from Egypt and Persia. Art Deco designers used low relief designs, stepped forms and emphasized geometrical order and simple formats. Art Deco characteristics on the school can be seen in the decorative brick panels and the cast stone capitals. They reflect a design sophistication not found in local construction at the time and the result was a positive and proud architectural statement for the new black high school of Staunton.



A close-up of the Art Deco stone designs at the school. (Photo by Nancy Sorrells)

The school was designed by Richmond architect Raymond V. Long who was the Supervisor of School Buildings for the State Department of Education when he executed this design. He designed public school buildings for Virginia from 1923 to 1937. *The Virginia Architects 1835-1955: A Biographical Dictionary* by John E. Wells and Robert E. Dalton lists thirty-five schools designed by Long during his time with the state, including a high school in Lexington in 1927 and an addition to the Bridgewater High School in 1930. The Booker T. Washington High School project in Staunton, however, is not among the list. According to the Staunton newspapers and the Staunton School Board minutes, however, he was clearly the architect.⁹

A review of several of Long's school designs in the Virginia Department of Education's Office of School Facilities Services revealed that he made a transition from a more classical Colonial Revival aesthetic to the Art Deco motifs from the early to mid-1930s. His design for the primary and elementary school in Winchester in 1930 was a sophisticated and correct classical design with semi-circular arched windows, an entrance capped with a broken pediment and an attractive cupola crowning the roof. His Bent Mountain School in Roanoke County in



the same year continued his preference for the Colonial Revival with a gable-roofed central block flanked by two wings with parapet walls. These wings had no windows but Long added decorative brick panels in each with a diapering design.

In 1931, Long's design for the Sunnyside-McKinney School in Dinwiddie County continued the decorative brick panels but in this instance, he used a stacked brick arrangement similar to Booker T. Washington's panels. While the Dinwiddie school was one story, its exterior had other features similar to his Staunton design. The central entrance had Art Deco stylized fluted pilasters that were capped with a star-like circular panel and the overall bay was crowned with projecting molded Art Deco panels. The plan was similar to the Booker T. Washington example with a second entry at the end of the double-loaded corridor that was interrupted with a perpendicular auditorium wing projecting from the central part of the hall. Long's most sophisticated Art Deco design was for the 1935 George Washington High School in Alexandria with its elaborately carved panels at the entrance and cast stone projecting piers dividing each bay of the façade. It should be noted that although Long transitioned into a preference for the Art Deco in the 1930s, most of his designs were limited to exterior stylistic elements and the interiors continued to use standard materials and simple designs that related more to budget issues than aesthetic preferences.

In December 1935, Nielsen Construction in Harrisonburg was awarded the Booker T. Washington project but with \$4,343.50 removed in order to reduce costs. The most significant amount of reduction on the project was \$2,482 that was removed by eliminating the auditorium/gymnasium from the bid.

When word got out that this space was removed from the project, the city's African American parents appeared before the school board and petitioned the city to not cut corners, especially with the auditorium. In February a contract was signed and the auditorium was returned to the project.¹⁰

The school design and facilities were of a much higher quality than the old school. The new building included space for vocational training for boys and girls (manual training and home African American economics), a science room, a library, and a stage at one end of the auditorium/gymnasium. There was even a shower room for physical education and athletics.¹¹

Work began immediately, but winter weather got the project off to



The combination auditorium/gymnasium was almost removed from the construction plan until the African-American community protested. (Photo by Nancy Sorrells)

a slow start. The other delaying factor was the fact that in construction, workers discovered that the old city reservoir was filled with junked car parts, bottles, and other trash. The instability of the reservoir was shored up with cement, but the delays meant that the school would not be ready to open at the start of the school year in September of 1936.¹²

As a result of the instability issues with the reservoir backfill, the October 1935 architectural drawings were revised on April 15, 1936, to include cement support under the auditorium floor where it spanned the old reservoir. In addition to the above factors, the steep slope of the site made work difficult as well, prompting one construction worker to state that the site was “one of the worst locations I ever worked on.”¹³

A request for delay prompted an inspection by Architect Long and the federal authorities who then granted Nielsen an extension until the first of October to finish the project. That might have been somewhat optimistic, but the project was nearing the end in early October when the newspaper reported that “The structure is one that compares favorable with any in this city or any other city of like size. It is modern in every respect, constructed of the best of materials, and, to meet modern-day



standards in the matter of lighting, heating, acoustics, etc.” Ironically the part of the building that was lauded most by the newspaper was the auditorium that almost wasn’t built. “Of particular interest is the large auditorium in the new school. Even the most casual test will convince the person inspecting the building that here at last is an auditorium in which the acoustics appear to be perfect. There is not the semblance of an echo, especial care having been taken in the use of materials...”¹⁴

The entire project cost \$75,000, \$30,000 from the federal government and the rest from the city of Staunton. The Staunton portion included \$6,600 to purchase the land. The school was designed to handle 200 pupils.¹⁵ In the years between 1940 and 1950, Staunton’s population almost doubled to nearly 20,000 people. Part of this increase was due to annexation and part was due to increased job opportunities. A rising population also meant more school age students. In 1950 there were 2,372 students in the city, 410 of whom were black.¹⁶

Schools, both black and white were again overcrowded throughout the 1950s and substantive improvements came in 1959 when a badly needed expansion was added to the Booker T. Washington School. The school board purchased four additional lots adjoining the school property and the architectural firm of Smithey and Boynton in Roanoke drew up plans for the building that was approved by the State Superintendent of School Buildings Construction in March of 1959.¹⁷

Late in the year, plans for the \$114,800 project were approved and the contractor was J. B. Wine & Sons. The project included a \$99,800 addition to the building that added at least four classrooms, additional equipment and lighting, new flooring, surfacing the play area, a new roof, refurbishing the restrooms, purchasing desks, grading, seeding, and painting at the old building, and the cost of architectural fees. By late January of 1960 the addition was ready for student occupancy and housed elementary school students.¹⁸

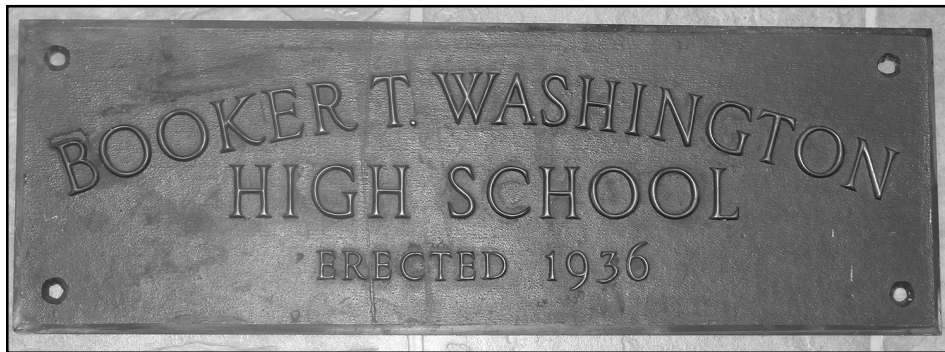
The opening of the beautiful, modern two-story brick building in 1936 meant more to the African American community than simply a new school. Perhaps author Laten Bechtel sums it up best in her book on the African American schools in Staunton and Augusta County. “The completion of BTW meant not only education opportunities for local African Americans in an environment conducive to learning. The new high school also gave the black community of Staunton, which had been denied access to places for social activities, their own space to collectively organize, discuss issues that impacted them, to hold fundraisers and other events.”¹⁹



Other Community Functions

Many of the requests for non-school events are recorded in the city's school board minutes. The first one on record came from the Ambassador's Club that wanted to rent the auditorium for a fashion show and a dance on March 26, 1937. The request for the show was granted, but the dance was denied. A rental rate of \$10 for charity and cultural groups and \$25 for businesses and political groups was established. Many groups would rent the space over the years.

The final say in which outside group was granted access to the building and which wasn't fell upon the school board although as the years progressed many of the decisions relating to community groups were handed over to the administration of the school that was headed up by principal Arthur Ware by 1950. Over the years some "more modern" music groups were denied permission to rent. Professional groups such as the Eighteenth Annual Convention of the Virginia State Association of Letter Carriers were allowed to meet in the auditorium. Mt. Zion Baptist Church was granted permission to present a musical in the space, but the Rev. T.J. Jemison, pastor of that same church, was denied permission to hold a dance. Other black groups that used the school over the years included the African American Boy Scout Troop, the VFW Auxiliary, and a club supporting a day nursery.



The school's student activities also drew the community together. Basketball games, played in the new auditorium, drew packed crowds. The black community had never before had an indoor space for sports activities. Even a local adult black basketball team practiced and played at BTW.²⁰

The school's athletic teams gained a reputation state wide. In 1940 the basketball team captured the state championship and garnered a congratulatory letter from the Staunton school board. The Golden Eagles again captured the state basketball championship in 1961.²¹



Athletics was not the only service that the school provided to the greater African American community. In 1937, a small space in the elementary school was designated as library space for the community, which was denied access to the city's white library. When BTW opened in October, the new school's library was also designated as a "substation" of the city library for "colored patrons." To put this into perspective, the BTW library contained 763 books, while the white public library contained 11,430 volumes. The federal Works Progress Administration requested that the Booker T. Washington library be open two days a week for use by the greater African American community. The school board granted the federal request.²²

Booker T. Washington was a school dedicated to shaping the best adults possible. One teacher remembers the high standard set by the administration and expected by the community in spite of the inequality of materials such as books and supplies between the black and the white schools.

We didn't have a lot of things that we needed as teachers...probably didn't know that then...we just accepted what we had and did not know anything else. But we gave the students solid book learning and developed character and discipline. We taught character and values years before Dr. Martin Luther King. I said, stop talking about slavery...must go forward, you have a life to live. Use your brain and your hands. We gave them advice...watch and improve your integrity...admit it when you are wrong. Be dependable. Honor your parents...beware of the company you keep...respect your elders.²³

Accreditation was important and the school gained and retained listing by the 1930s. In early 1940 the school board was told that to maintain Booker T's accreditation, it would need to have a certified librarian. Helen Burkes, the acting teacher-librarian, was offered a ten dollar a month salary increase if she would attend twelve weeks of summer school to be accredited, which she did.²⁴ In 1947 the school was again placed on the accredited list of the Southern Association of Colleges and Secondary Schools for the 1946-1947 school year, a fact that was celebrated in the community.

In the surrounding county that still lacked a high school for black students, parents continued to send their children into the city for a better education. At Booker T. students could participate in science labs, serve on the school newspaper, join the science club, art club, drama club, library club, take business education classes, earn entrance into



The interior layout of the school library remains intact from the time when it served both the community and the students. (Photo by Nancy Sorrells)

the honor society, be on the yearbook staff (*The Echo*), learn industrial arts and sewing, play musical instruments, sing in the chorus, and, of course, compete in athletics.²⁵

Parents encouraged you to go to school. They saw it as a way out," remembered one graduate of Booker T. Washington. "Back then the only jobs were janitor and things like that. Then the factories came. Graduating was good because we had geometry and trigonometry and things like that. That gave us a plus for those things opening up like ASR (American Safety Razor), General Electric... that opened doors.²⁶

One of the most active clubs in the school was the Future Business Leaders of America (FBLA), a national organization of students enrolled in business classes. The idea of FBLA was launched at Columbia University of New York City in the 1937-1938 school year and had gone national by 1940. Chapter 448 at Staunton's Booker T. Washington, formed in 1952, was possibly the first African American FBLA organization in the state. In the 1962-1963 school year, Andrew A. Venable, Jr., from the Staunton chapter was elected as the Virginia Black FBLA



President. As such, part of his duties required him to travel around Virginia to help set up new chapters. In March of 1963 he helped launch Chapter 2787, the new FBLA chapter at the brand new Augusta County African American High School known as Central Augusta High School.

Venable went on to earn a bachelor's degree from Virginia State University in 1968 and a masters in library science in 1978 from Case Western Reserve University in Cleveland, Ohio. He eventually became the Director of the Cleveland Public Library in 1999, a position that he held until his retirement in 2008.²⁷

In addition to the normal high school curriculum at the school, the Veterans Bureau used the school as a venue to provide job training for veterans returning from war. In September 1951, a brick masonry class was taught at BTW that was funded by the federal government. Also in the 1950s a night typing class was offered. There is also evidence that an airplane mechanics class was offered.²⁸

The first graduation at the new school occurred in 1937. By 1940, one of the groups requesting use of the school as a meeting space was the alumni association, an indication that the school continued to be the center of the community for Staunton's African Americans even after graduation. Today the alumni continue to hold events at the school and maintain a history room.

Benefit events to help with community or school projects were often the subject of requests to use the school. In 1944, the Colored Parent-Teachers Association wanted to hold a subscription dance. Although the school board routinely denied requests for dances at the school, they granted an exception in this case, stating: "In view of the fact that this was a parent organization making the request, the request was granted provided the high school principal would be present to assume responsibility for the care of school property."²⁹

By the early 1960s, the days of Jim Crow segregation were numbered in Staunton and the rest of the south. Despite the 1954 *Brown v. Board of Education* Supreme Court decision striking down school segregation, Virginia and its localities resisted the integration of its public schools. Five years after the court's decision, Staunton poured a large sum of money into the 1959 upgrade of Booker T. Washington with the intention of keeping it segregated. Nine years after the *Brown* decision, Augusta County opened a new African American high school and the Booker T. FBLA helped the new school launch its FBLA club.

But the end was near. The Civil Rights movement had come to



The school in 1963. (Courtesy Booker T. Washington alumni room)

Staunton. In March of 1960, a request was heard before the school board to use the school's auditorium for voter registration. The request was granted by the school board (with one abstention) and the lower civic fee of \$10 was charged.³⁰

In 1966, Staunton's public schools were fully integrated. The administrators, teachers, coaches, and support staff at Booker T. Washington were absorbed into the now integrated Staunton public school system. Booker T. Washington High School was closed. Arthur Ware, the beloved teacher and then principal of Booker T. from 1950 until 1966, would go on to have a city school named for him. Ware was also an esteemed historian and helped document the African American community that had been his home for his entire life. Central to the entire community, and not just the educational community, from 1936 until 1966, had been the school upon the hill – Booker T. Washington School.

Endnotes

¹ Laten Bechtel, *"That's Just The Way It Was": A Chronological and Documentary History of African-American Schools in Staunton and Augusta County* (Staunton, Va.: Lot's Wife Publishing, 2010), 114.

² Staunton School Board minutes 1935-66 (SSBM). Housed in the Staunton City Office Building, Staunton, Va.

³ Bechtel.

⁴ Bechtel, 108.

⁵ Bechtel, 109.

⁶ SSBM 1935.



Photograph of a group of students standing in front of the school in the 1964 yearbook. (Courtesy Booker T. Washington alumni room)



Undated photograph of the school taken by someone standing on Johnson Street. (Courtesy Booker T. Washington alumni room)

⁷ Ibid.

⁸ Ibid.

⁹ John E. Wells and Robert E. Dalton, *The Virginia Architects 1835-1955: A Biographical Dictionary* (Richmond, Va.: New South Architectural Press, 1997), 267-8; SSBM.

¹⁰ SSBM 1935.

¹¹ Blueprints created by the Virginia Division of School Buildings, State Department of Education, Richmond, Va. for Staunton's African-American school, October 1935.

¹² SSBM; newspaper articles from the *Staunton News Leader*, 1935.

¹³ State revised blueprints, 15 April 1936; *Staunton News Leader*, 4 June 1936.

¹⁴ *Staunton News Leader*, 6 October 1936; SSBM 1936.

¹⁵ SSBM 1935-36.

¹⁶ Bechtel, 138.

¹⁷ SSBM 1959.

¹⁸ Bechtel, 149; SSBM 1959-1960; *Staunton News Leader*, 1960.

¹⁹ Bechtel, 114.

²⁰ Information about outside activities held at the school comes from the SSBM 1937-66.

²¹ Ibid.

²² Bechtel, 1144, 118; SSBM.

²³ Bechtel, 130.

²⁴ SSBM.

²⁵ Booker T. Washington High School yearbooks.

²⁶ Bechtel, 137.

²⁷ Information about the FBLA and Venable comes from a large FBLA scrapbook housed in the BTW Alumni and History Room as well as the biographical information compiled by the original committee working on this nomination.

²⁸ SSBM.

²⁹ Ibid.

³⁰ Ibid., 23 March 1960.



Jewish Merchants of Downtown Staunton

By Ruth Chodrow and Karen Lynne Johnston

Editor's note: This piece is a carefully researched investigation by Ruth Chodrow and Karen Lynne Johnston of the large number of Jewish merchants who established their businesses in Staunton in the late nineteenth and early twentieth centuries. It will be an excellent reference for anyone seeking information on these individuals and their businesses for years to come. The many newcomers to the Staunton-Augusta community in the past two decades may have no idea that Staunton had a lively Jewish community that played a key role in the commercial life of the town and region. Someone shopping at boutiques on Beverley Street today or enjoying a gourmet meal at one of today's fine restaurants might not understand that this street was once the commercial heart of the entire city and county. In the era before national chain stores in malls or big box stores on the edge of town, mercantile establishments on Beverley Street met nearly all the material needs of the locals. In Staunton, many of those stores were owned and operated by members of the local Jewish community. In this respect, Staunton was typical of hundreds of Southern towns and small cities at that time, and is typical still in experiencing the near disappearance of that Jewish mercantile community once so vital to the commercial life of the town.

In the late 1800s and early 1900s, downtown Staunton was a bustling place filled with stores, warehouses, and shops of all kinds. A stroll downtown would show store after store owned and operated by merchants with Jewish names – Loeb, Switzer, Cohen, Weinberg, Strauss. Who were these people, and how did they come to Staunton?

Most Jews who came to America at that time period were escaping from Central and Eastern Europe. Persecutions, discrimination, and lack of economic opportunity all played a role. In many European countries, Jews were not allowed to own land, pursue higher education, or work at certain trades; they hoped to escape poverty by emigration. Political unrest, such as the failed revolutions of 1848 in many European countries, may have spurred others to leave.



Jews coming to America tended to congregate at centers of trade, mostly large cities. However, some merchants who may have started in Baltimore, Richmond, or Charlottesville found their way down to Staunton at the turn of the century – at that time a busy mini-metropolis with a train line right into town.

Jews started coming to Staunton in the mid-1800s and in 1876 started meeting in each others' homes. By 1886 there were enough Jews to form a congregation, Temple House of Israel, and to purchase a building on Kalorama Street for use as a synagogue. The minutes of the first congregational meeting listed 24 men, almost all of whom were merchants. These merchants were primarily from states in today's Germany, including the part that was then called Prussia. In the minutes of the congregational meeting of February 1, 1885,¹ the members all pledged to close their businesses on Fridays at 7:00 p.m. in order to attend worship services at 7:30 p.m.

Please note that the street addresses are from the records of the times. Over the years, street numbers downtown have changed dramatically, sometimes more than once.

Clothing and Shoe Stores

Barth and Weinberg

Simon Barth opened "Augusta Clothing Hall" in the early 1870s. After he died his brother, Joseph L. Barth, took over the business in 1881. The name was changed to "Barth Clothing Store."² Joseph Barth came to Staunton from Philadelphia, having come there from Wurtemberg.³ He was one of the original members of the congregation.⁴ Joseph Barth went into partnership with Lamartine G. Strauss from Yorkville, South Carolina. In 1884 he established Jos. L. Barth and Co., Clothiers, specializing in men's and boy's clothes. The store was noted for the excellent quality of its clothing. By 1887 he held a position as a trustee of Temple House of Israel, and was involved in purchasing the Hoover House on Kalorama Street which would become the first temple for the congregation.⁵ Joseph Barth was also the first treasurer of Temple House of Israel. His partner L.G. Strauss married Mr. Barth's sister Regina in 1890. Their daughter Fannie B. Strauss became a noted teacher at Mary Baldwin College.

Abraham Weinberg (1868-1943) came to Staunton in 1895. He was listed in the Staunton 1900 census as being born in Germany in 1870. However, his grandson Abram Kronsberg has indicated that he was



Photograph of Abraham Weinberg, circa 1940, from the archives of the Staunton Rotary Club, currently housed at Historic Staunton Foundation.

born in 1868 in Deventer, Holland, and this also the country of origin listed in a 1940 newspaper article. The 1868 date is the one on his tombstone in the Temple House of Israel cemetery.

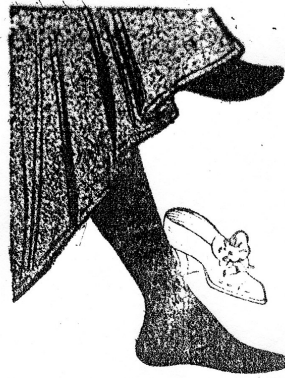
Weinberg had already been involved in the clothing business in Baltimore.⁶ As a young man, he stepped off the train at the Staunton station and asked a nearby police officer where might be a good place to open a clothing store. The officer told him that he might as well get back on the train, because Joseph Barth “had all the men’s trade tied up throughout this area.”⁷ Undeterred, Weinberg opened up the Weinberg Clothing Company at 5 S. Augusta Street. Unlike Barth’s store, he also carried women’s clothing.

He later married Johanna Barth, Joseph Barth’s half-sister.⁸ In 1911 the two stores consolidated to become Barth, Weinberg and Company. The consolidated store carried clothing for men, women, and boys.

Abraham Weinberg was a strong supporter of the local Jewish community. In 1924, the congregation was still worshipping in the small building on Kalorama street that had been purchased in 1886. One day Mr. Weinberg stood up in temple and proclaimed, “I’m tired of worshipping in something that looks like a warehouse! I’ll put up half the money for a real temple if the congregation will raise the other half.”⁹ He did and they did. The cornerstone for the current Temple House of Israel was laid the next year.

Abraham Weinberg also supported the community. He was a Mason and a Shriner. Eventually his partners L.G. Strauss and Joseph Barth retired, and then Abraham ran the business with his son, Irving. In addition to being a Mason and a Shriner like his father, Irving was also a member of the Rotary club and American Legion.¹⁰

Abraham and Johanna Weinberg left the temple an endowment,



Don't Darn Your Stockings Any More

Put your darning basket away in the closet—you won't need it for six months when you buy the first box of Holeproof Hosiery.

Darning is now almost a thing of the past. For with every box of "Holeproof" we give a written guarantee to replace any pair that needs darning in six months. Instead of

taking out your darning basket you merely take out a coupon and get a new pair of hose free—Isn't that simple?

FAMOUS Holeproof Hosiery FOR MEN WOMEN AND CHILDREN

The makers pay an average of 70 cents a pound for the finest Egyptian and Sea Island Cotton Yarn. Common hose are often made from cotton at 12 cents a pound. Yet the common hose sell for the same price as "Holeproof."

"Holeproof" uses 3-ply in the body and 6-ply in the heels and toes. Ordinary hose are made from 2-ply yarn throughout. You pay no more for "Holeproof" but it wears six times longer.

Come in and see this hosiery. Note the style and comfort—see how light and soft it is. Buy one box and try it. Note how it hugs the ankle. Then, if you can, continue using the common hosiery.

We have a complete assortment of sizes and colors. They are very smart. Prices are 6 pairs for \$2, and 6 pairs for \$3—guaranteed six months.

Weinberg Clothing Co.

Exclusive Agents for Staunton, Va.

HEADQUARTERS FOR

MEN'S, BOY'S AND CHILDREN'S

CLOTHING,

*HATS, SHIRTS, GLOVES, HANDKERCHIEFS, NECK-
WEAR, COLLARS AND CUFFS, BOOTS AND
SHOES, TRUNKS AND SATCHELS.*

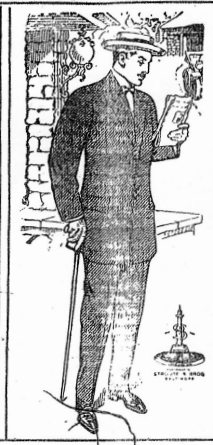
JOS. L. BARTH,

9 S. Augusta Street Staunton, Va.



STAUNTON DISPATCH-NEWS

Weinberg Clothing Co.



COME to Weinberg's for anything and everything you need in Men's Wear because there are reasons why in everyone of our departments--there is a reason why in everything we sell.

Good reasons in abundance in our Men's Clothing Department. SERGE--There's a difference in blue serge. Half of the men in Staunton and Augusta County right now do not wear blue serge. They would like to no doubt but they are afraid--they are afraid the cloth will fade--they are afraid it will pucker at the seams--they are afraid they won't hold their shape.

About half of our regular customers in warm weather ask at once for Blue Serge. Why? Because they know Weinberg's Blue Serge--they are not afraid. Weinberg's Blue is the kind that will not fade. It is the kind that will hold their shape. Weinberg's Serges are like all the rest of Weinberg's Clothes.

All sorts of Serges are here--Plain, Blue, black and grey, also indistinct stripes.

There is nothing in Staunton like our boys and children's suits. We always have specialized on the dress of boys because we believe in winning our customer's young. Weinberg's Clothes for Boys are made for boys. It will stand up under the roughest of hard wear. It will look well under that hard wear longer than any other Boy's Clothing to be had in Staunton. We guarantee it.

We handle the best of everything, Mother's Friend Wash Suits and Blouses, Holeproof Hosiery, Harves Hats and the best makes in all furnishings.

Weinberg Clothing Co.

A PHANTOM COACH. | DIDN'T GET IT RIGHT. | THE BEST THEY HAD.

Flannel Suits are smart this summer

HEY come in a great variety of new colors; the biscuit shades are especially good--so are the grays-granite and Prince; there are blues galore, too -Antwerp and bottle blue are among the best. You'll not only find the colors you like, but styles and prices, too



Suits For Hot Weather

Now is the time to select your tropical waisted suit. They are of light weight wool or worsted fabric--porous for coolness and firm enough for style and tailoring. They come in all the good models and colors and are reasonably priced.

You will find here also a complete stock in raincoats, mohairs, palm beaches, flannels, seersuckers and linens.

Everything you desire in the way of summer furnishings is here in plenty of variety.

BARTH-WEINBERG & CO.
STAUNTON'S LEADING CLOTHIERS



commemorated on a plaque in the sanctuary of the current temple. The family continued to have strong ties to the community, even though later descendants moved away. In 1996, Abraham Weinberg's great-grandson had his Bar Mitzvah ceremony at Temple House of Israel in Staunton.

Palais Royale

Originally located at 23 W. Main Street, the Palais Royale called itself "The House of Fashion" and boasted "Ladies' ready-to-wear and millinery." Morris Summerfield was the proprietor in 1906.¹¹

According to his great-granddaughter, Melanie Summerfield Lee, Morris' wife Anne Davison Summerfield did all the millinery work for the store. They were never listed as being part of the congregation, and preferred not to identify as Jews. Ms. Lee explained that her grandmother, following family custom, wouldn't even say the word "challah" (the braided loaf traditionally served on Friday evenings) because it sounded "too Jewish." She called it egg bread instead.

By 1916 Summerfield had sold to Crowell and Sachs Company (*Staunton City Directory, 1916-1917*). The store was run by Sy (Simon) Sachs. By the 1920s, it was located at 9 E. Main Street, and was known primarily as a full-service fur store, with all work done on the premises.¹²

A. Loeb & Co.

Adolph Loeb had a clothing store, A. Loeb & Co, listed at 17 S. Augusta Street. His brother Julius was the manager.¹³ The Loeb brothers also had a dry-goods business (see below).

N.Y. Clothing House

In 1884, Bernard Oberdorfer, an immigrant from Wurtemberg, ran a clothing store at 25 S. Augusta Street.¹⁴

Samuel Shultz Shoes

Samuel Shultz was born in Prussia and served in the Prussian army. After living in New York, he moved with his family to Staunton in 1872.¹⁵ He had a shoe business at 7 S. New Street until 1898.¹⁶ He was the father of Albert Shultz (see below).

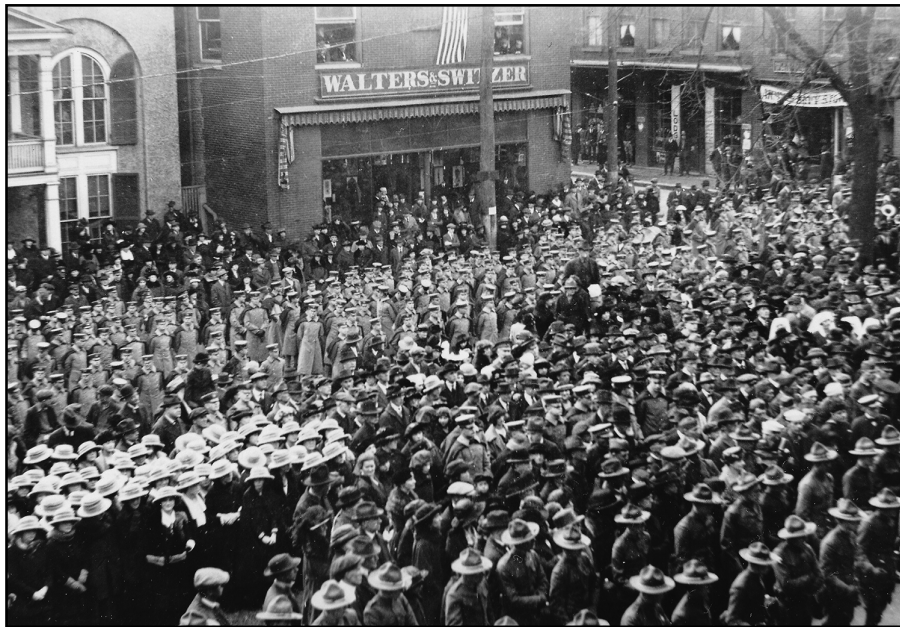
Walters, Harry

Harry Walters came to Staunton shortly before 1922 and opened a store to sell "Ladies Garments" at 13 East Main Street.¹⁷ He and his wife opened and operated a gift shop in the newly opened Stonewall Jackson Hotel, where they also lived.



Walters and Switzer

Charles F. Switzer, brother of David Switzer (below) went into business about 1904 with Abraham Walters, brother of Moses (Mose) Walters. Abraham Walters was born in Maryland of Russian Polish parents. They had the Walters and Switzer Clothing Store on 2 Court House Street (later called E. Johnson Street) which advertised “Men and Ladies Ready-to-Wear.”¹⁸ The building was across the street from the Augusta County courthouse. This building was torn down to make a jail. The jail was then adapted for its present use as the Augusta Juvenile and Domestic Relations District Court.



Troops assembled in front of the Walters and Switzer clothing store on Johnson Street opposite the courthouse prior to leaving for the battle-front during World War I. (From the collections of Richard and Thomas Hamrick and David Schwartz.)

Scrap and salvage Klotz Brothers

Young Jacob and Amos Klotz, with their parents, came from Russia in 1888, and the family settled in Hanover, MD. In 1900, 19-year old Amos was a junk dealer there.¹⁹ Jacob and Amos were traveling peddlers working out of their horse-drawn wagon. They came down from Maryland, passing through Staunton on their way to Ohio. In Staunton, their horse died, and they couldn't afford a replacement.²⁰



By 1904, Amos had rented an area of land near Lewis Creek and Lewis Street, which was used as a junkyard.²¹ They bought and sold scrap metal, wool, furs, rubber, rags, ginseng, hides – just about anything.²² Amos bought the property in 1917.²³ Eventually two more brothers, Morris and Elie (Alex), joined the business.²⁴ They purchased a giant electromagnet to pick up the loads of scrap iron.²⁵

The Klotz brothers prospered, and in 1929 built a large building at South Lewis Street, currently the location of Sunspots Studios.²⁶ It is assumed that the date 1899, prominently featured on the building, was the date that Amos and Jacob decided to go into business together. The Jewish mezuzah which they affixed on the door when they opened is currently in the historical exhibit case at Temple House of Israel.

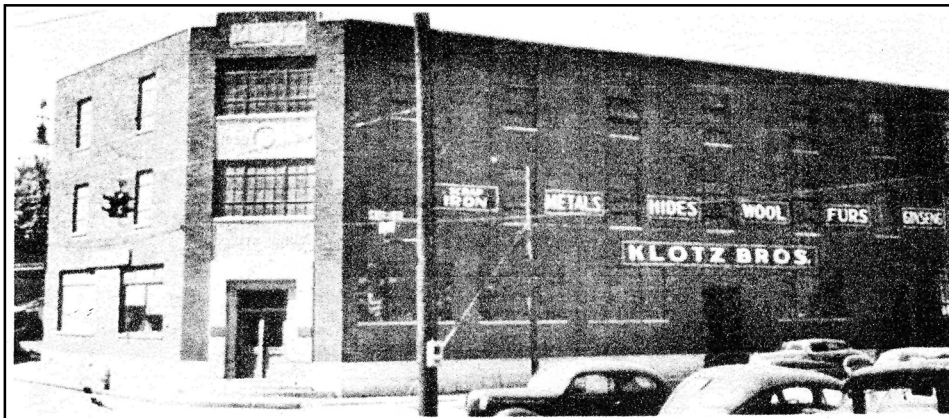


This photograph of a Klotz Brothers float, probably for a July Fourth parade about 1907, shows, left to right, Morris Klotz, Amos Klotz, and Jacob (Jake) Klotz. (From the collection of Richard and Thomas Hamrick)

The brothers were very different. Amos didn't know how to read or write. However, he could sign his name. It was with his characteristic large handwriting that he signed his will, which left generous bequests to multiple Jewish charities and institutions.²⁷ Jacob was described as "crude and swearing", and always wore shirts and khaki trousers. Morris, the youngster of the family, always wore a coat and tie, was a member of Rotary, and was a "gentleman by anyone's standards."



Brothers Jake, left, and Morris G. Klotz, circa 1940. Photographs from the archives of the Staunton Rotary Club housed at Historic Staunton Foundation.



KLOTZ BROTHERS, Furs, Hides, Wools, Iron, Metals, Waste Materials, Staunton, Virginia, is one of Augusta county's oldest firms, having been established in 1899. Occupying one of the most representative business buildings in the city, and with large storage yards, this company does a large volume of business. G. K. Morris is the owner and manager.

Advertisement showing the Klotz Brothers Building on South Lewis Street at the corner of Middlebrook Avenue. (From the collection of Richard and Thomas Hamrick)



Notice to Hunters and Trappers !

I am now in position, more than ever before, to pay you the highest cash prices for all kinds of FURS with the most liberal assortment. Am also in the market at all times for green and dry hides, scrap iron, rubber, brass and all kinds of junk.

SEE ME BEFORE SELLING.

AMOS KLOTZ,

202 S. Lewis St., Staunton, Va. PHONE 638.
Skunks, Foxes, Lynx, Possums, Muskrats and Otter.

However, he always made sure to carry a magnet in his coat pocket, to check on the scrap metal that was brought in.²⁸ Morris also served as a trustee of the temple.

General Stores

Grand Dry Goods Bazaar

Alexander Hart (1839-1915) was born in New Orleans, and started out life as a store clerk. When the Civil War broke out, he enlisted and eventually became part of the brigade known as the Louisiana Tigers. He saw much action in the Civil War, was wounded several times, and achieved the rank of Major. At one point during the war, his regiment was ordered to pass through Staunton – apparently the first time he had been there.

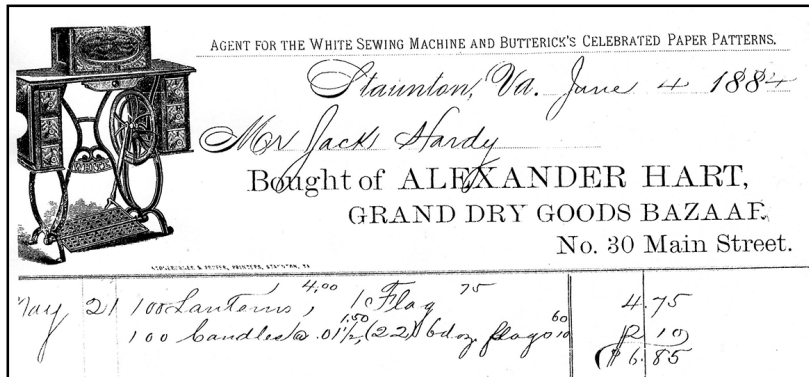
After the war, Major Hart married Leonora Levy and went into business with her family in Richmond. In 1876 he started a branch of the Levy dry goods business in Staunton on West Main Street (now West Beverley Street).²⁹ Major Hart's business failed in 1893 and he had to turn over all the contents of his store to satisfy his creditors. He then relocated to Norfolk.

Although Major Hart was in Staunton for a relatively short time compared with some of the other merchants, he had a lasting influence. He founded the congregation Temple House of Israel in Staunton, and was its first president, leading the congregation for 18 years. The congregation still exists today.

Loeb Bros. Dry Goods Store

Ferdinand, Adolphus, and Julius Loeb immigrated from Germany in 1865. According to the "Enterprises of the Valley of Virginia," they became proprietors of a business that had been started in 1854 called Hilb and Loeb.³⁰

In 1875 the three brothers purchased a brick store at the corner of



Receipt from the establishment of Alexander Hart, who operated a dry goods store on Beverley Street. (From the collection of Thomas Hamrick)

Beverley and New Streets, and established the Loeb Brothers Dry Goods Store.³¹ In "Representative Enterprises of the Valley of Virginia", p. 93, it reads, "In the carpet department are to be found carpets, oilcloths and mattings of all styles and qualities, of American and Foreign manufacture...." The store also sold cloth. "The products of the looms of the best manufacturers of the old world and the new, including all the latest styles and patterns of silks, velvets, cashmeres, and other fine dress goods....and all the latest novelties in laces, ribbons, embroideries, insertions and other neckwear..."

By 1885, the two-story building had been remodeled into the three-story building that stands today.³² A relative, William Loeb, opened a shoe store, also on Main Street, about 1904.³³

Witz Dry Goods

Isaac Witz was born in Austria (also listed as Prussia). His parents and siblings settled in Baltimore. In 1865, he married Fannie Heller, who came from Germany and was the daughter of Heiman Heller, a dry goods merchant in Harrisonburg.³⁴ His younger brother Moritz, listed as being born in Bohemia, came to Virginia in 1865 and became a citizen in 1876.³⁵

In 1865, Isaac ran a newspaper advertisement that he was selling a variety of items at a store on Beverley Street. He advertised "cheap for cash or in exchange for farm produce." The offerings included "dry goods, groceries, hardware, iron stoves, machine oil, and the best articles of Spanish Sole Leather."³⁶

In 1866 he purchased from Moritz Lowenbeck a three-story brick building on the north side of Beverley Street.³⁷ In the 1870 census he was listed as a dry good merchant.³⁸



No. 20 East Main Street was the location of the Witz brothers dry goods store, called simply I. Witz and Bro., which included “dress goods of every description, and of the latest styles and patterns, domestic and cheap fabrics of all kinds, and the latest novelties in neckwear, laces, trimmings, &c, ladies fine shoes, suiting to all purposes.”³⁹

Isaac was a prominent member of the community. He was on the board of visitors for the School for DD&B (now the Virginia School for the Deaf and Blind)⁴⁰ and was elected to city council in 1884.⁴¹

In 1890, the brothers went their separate ways. Moritz moved to Baltimore, where their mother still lived.⁴² The store was still listed at 20



Next door to Paul Mix, watchmaker and jeweler on Beverley Street, was the I. Witz and Brother establishment. The Witz sign can be seen to the right of the watchmaker in this photograph. (From the collections of Richard and Thomas Hamrick and David Schwartz)

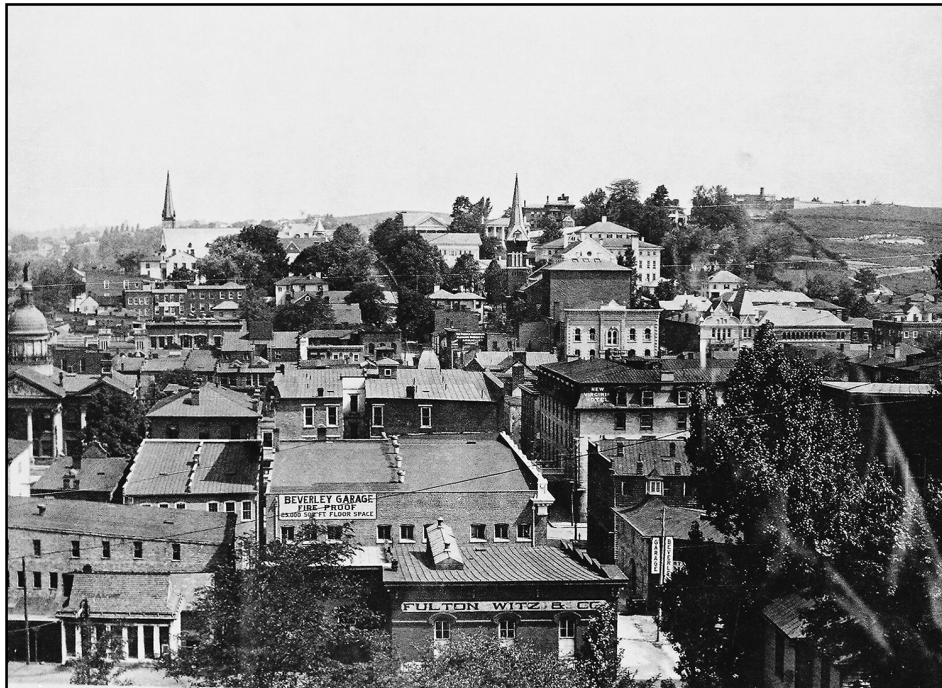


Main Street, but was under the new name of “Witz, Lightner, and Co.” The partners were now Isaac Witz, J.T. Lightner, and Isaac’s son Morris Henry Witz.⁴³ Isaac’s daughter Leila married W.S. Burke. By 1898, the dry goods business was named Witz, Burke and Co. The store advertised, “Dry Goods, Notions, Carpets, and Housefurnishing Goods”⁴⁴ The business had grown rapidly to include two adjacent storefronts. In 1906, the dry goods store’s spaces were rebuilt as the Witz Building.

Religiously, the family went in very different directions. Isaac’s brother Moritz was one of the original officers of Temple House of Israel, serving as secretary, and was a trustee in the purchase of the original synagogue. It appears that Isaac was never a member of the temple. At least three of Isaac’s children (Julius, Leila, and Rosalie) were baptized in Emmanuel Episcopal Church.⁴⁵ However, even after his baptism at age twenty-two and marriage to an Episcopalian, Julius continued to send generous donations to Temple House of Israel every year.⁴⁶

G. Hirsh and Co.

In 1852, Mason and Gabriel Hirsh, originally of Darmstadt, Germany,



Fulton, Witz, & Co. can be seen on the side of this building in downtown Staunton.



bought a store building near the southeast corner of Beverley and Augusta Streets.⁴⁷ Gabriel Hirsh was one of the original members of the congregation, as listed in the minutes.⁴⁸ Gabriel ran the variety store as G. Hirsh and Co. until 1886.⁴⁹ An ad in the *Staunton Spectator* of April 3, 1860, touted his suitability for Governor of the Atlantic Cable Company, of which he was a stockholder.

In his newspaper ads, his wares included everything from gold jewelry to wall paper to hoop skirts. An 1868 ad specified that parasols were from “our own manufacture in Philadelphia.”⁵⁰ A burglary report in the paper detailed the theft of “two gold watches, several silver watches, cloth, handkerchiefs, and other articles...” from the store.⁵¹

Mills

In 1869, Isaac Witz and Charles Holt bought land on Lewis Creek near the present Commerce Road. They built a four-story mill, powered by water and later augmented by steam. The mill even boasted a fireproof brick elevator.⁵² In 1881, the newspaper reported that “a telephonic connection has been established between the store of Isaac Witz on Main Street with the mill of Messrs. Witz and Holt.” The paper went on to say that “they set an example which should be followed by other enterprising citizens” (i.e., business owners). Presumably the owners could be expected to recoup their expenses by the increased efficiency of using the telephone instead of the more common practice of sending messenger boys. The 1891 perspective map of the city of Staunton showed the location of the Witz and Holt Flouring Mill.

Witz and Holt sold the mill in 1895 and joined with two other businessmen to form White Star Mills Company. They built a modern steam-powered mill near the train station that remained in production as a mill until 1966.⁵³ The mill now houses a restaurant, the Mill Street Grill.

Jewelry

D. L. Switzer Jewelry

The parents of David L. Switzer (1868-1925) came to this country from Wurtemberg (Germany). Abraham and Babette Switzer had a dry-goods store in Botetort County. In 1880 they retired and came to Staunton. Born in Lexington, Virginia, David Switzer started off in the dry goods business, then worked as a jeweler. He opened the Grubert and Switzer jewelry store in 1898. His first location was in the Marquis



Condensed Statement Rendered U. S. Government			
THE NATIONAL VALLEY BANK OF STAUNTON, VIRGINIA			
MARCH 4, 1915			
Resources		Liabilities	
Loans and Investments.....	\$1,310,727.83	Capital Stock	\$ 200,000.00
United States Bonds.....	110,000.00	Surplus and Profits.....	277,799.79
Overdrafts.....	19.44	Circulation.....	92,000.00
Banking House and Fixtures	60,000.00	Deposits	1,153,498.87
Cash and Due from Banks..	254,551.39	Bond Account.....	12,000.00
	\$1,735,298.66		\$1,735,298.66
Augusta County's Oldest, Largest and Strongest Bank			
Designated by Federal Reserve Board to act as Executor, Trustee, Etc.			
J. H. Worthington, <i>President</i>	Wm. A. Pratt, <i>Vice-President</i>	Chas. S. Hunter, <i>Cashier</i>	
C. K. Hoge, <i>Asst. Cashier</i>	W. B. Miller, <i>Asst. Cashier</i>		
For The Graduate		ARISTA HOGE	W. B. McCHESNEY
are you at loss to know what to give this year?		HOGES & McCHESNEY	
It wont take long to decide if you will come in and look over our stock of fine Jewelry.		Atlas Insurance Agency	
We have just received a shipment of newly designed Class Pins, Brooches, Rings and other goods that would be very appropriate and couldn't be other than appreciated. We would appreciate a call from you.		<u>FIRE AND LIFE</u> <u>INSURANCE</u>	
D. L. SWITZER		Surety Bonds Furnished	
JEWELER		Office, Opera House	
19 Main Street		STAUNTON - - VIRGINIA	
STAUNTON, VA.			

Ad from the *Bluestocking, the Mary Baldwin College Yearbook, 1915*, page 198.

building (corner Augusta and Beverley Streets) at 3 East Main Street (now East Beverley Street).⁵⁴ The Historical and Industrial Edition of the *Staunton Dispatch* (January 1906) describes his shop as one which "contains everything of the finest quality. Superb diamonds, watches, clocks, beautiful cut glass and silverware adorn every inch of this spacious emporium." In 1911 he bought the building at 19 East Beverley Street.⁵⁵ The firm of T.J. Collins was hired to design a new structure there.⁵⁶ The original plans for the building are in the Collins Collection of Architectural Drawings at the Historic Staunton Foundation. The building, which now houses Shenandoah Pizza, has a distinctive façade of glazed white terracotta tiles resembling marble.

David Switzer married Minnie Cohen, the daughter of Louis Cohen. He was a long-time member of the Stonewall Brigade Band, playing the kettledrum and acting as vice-president of the organization.⁵⁷

Furniture

Isaac Witz started Witz Furniture Industries in the 1890s. His son Julius Witz (1868-1936) ran two furniture stores, Basic Furniture in



Waynesboro and J.L. Witz Furniture Store in Staunton.⁵⁸ Julius Witz was also the president of Citizens Gas Company.⁵⁹ Julius Witz served as mayor of Staunton from 1928 to 1932.

Livery Stable

Clarence Witz, son of Isaac, had a livery business on Greenville Avenue near the White Star Mill from about 1904-1918.⁶⁰ He had fine carriages and city-broken horses for hire. A 1908 newspaper ad claims that he had “the swellest turnouts in the city” for hire. He listed “funerals a specialty.”⁶¹



A modern photograph of the façade of the former Switzer jewelry shop. (Photograph by Ruth Chodrow)

Restaurants

Louis Cohen, an immigrant from Russian-held Poland, was in Staunton in the early 1880s. Cohen’s Restaurant opened on 13 South New Street, and it was thought to be the first “family eating place” in Staunton.⁶² Louis Cohen was the vice-president of the congregation at its founding. It was noted in the temple minutes that he was “Requested to assist the President in reading prayer in Hebrew.”⁶³ Presumably he was one of the few members of the congregation at that time who was able to read Hebrew. When Mose Walters first came to Staunton, he



Cohen's Restaurant (behind the pole) circa 1920. (From the collections of Richard and Thomas Hamrick and David Schwartz)

was a clerk in the Cohen restaurant. Mose married Rhea Cohen, a daughter of Louis and Fannie Cohen. Another Cohen daughter, Minnie, married David Switzer.⁶⁴ The restaurant operated until 1939.⁶⁵

Wholesale food

Walters Fruit and Produce; Augusta Fruit and Produce

Moses (Mose) Walters originally came from Baltimore. He started his wholesale fruit and vegetable business about 1915. By 1916 he had established Walters' Produce House at 102 E. Main Street.⁶⁶ In 1926 he went into the business with Morris (Maurice) Cohen and Walter E. Cohen, sons of Louis Cohen. They called their company Augusta Fruit and Produce.⁶⁷ The partners eventually split. Ten years later, Moses



Walters operated the Walters Fruit and Produce Company out of the American Hotel building at the C&O depot. Mr. Walters supplied fresh produce to small mercantile stores as well as institutions such as Augusta Military Academy, Mary Baldwin College, and the local public schools. He owned a number of local orchards, as well as a banana plantation in the Bahamas.⁶⁸

Entertainment

The Opera House

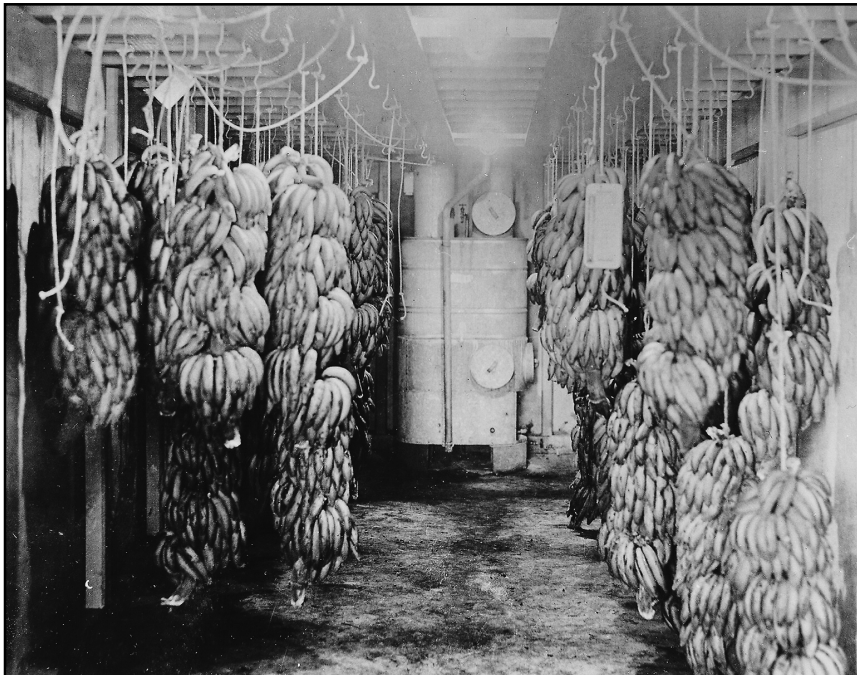
Albert Shultz was born in Poughkeepsie, N.Y. of parents who immigrated from Prussia and Scotland.⁷⁰ His father's occupation was listed as shoe merchant. Albert married Madeline Barth in 1897, which was the first wedding held in the temple on Kalorama Street. In 1909, Albert Shultz and W.H. Barkman gave \$1,200 to the city of Staunton for the right to use and occupy the Opera House, also known as the Beverley Theater, with the city maintaining janitorial services.⁷¹ The terms of the deed specified that the entertainment must be "moral and in no way indecent and subject must not be political or controversial on a matter that may be decided at an election. Licensees must maintain premises



Building of Augusta Fruit and Produce, 5-7 Middlebrook Avenue. The man at the far left, standing by himself in the doorway, is identified as Maurice Cohen. The third man from the left is Moses Walters. (From the collections of Richard and Thomas Hamrick and David Schwartz)



Underneath this large warehouse was a cold storage room for the produce. Rhea Walters, Moses Walters' wife, used to help out with the business. One day she went into the cold storage room, passed by the bananas, and a chilled but alive tarantula spider fell on her chest. She never went back into the building again.⁶⁹



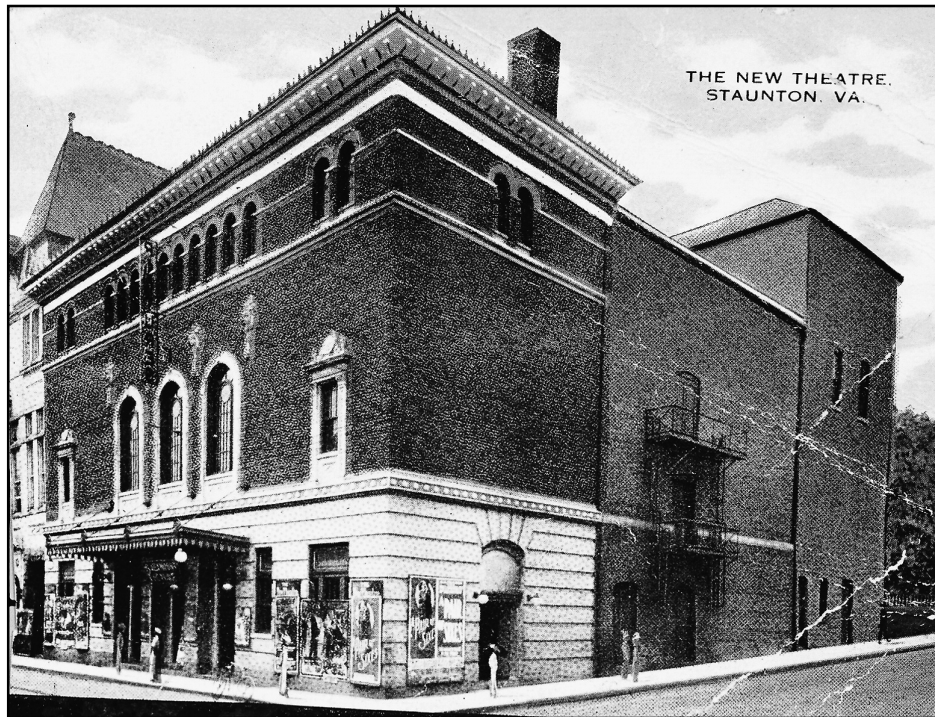
The banana cold storage room of Augusta Fruit and Produce, where Mrs. Walters had her unfortunate encounter with a tarantula. (From the collections of David Schwartz)



and pay taxes, arrange for proper police and fire protection, and shall separate the races as they are at present and no entertainment by colored performers shall be permitted except with the written permission first obtained of the Committee on Public Grounds and Bldgs of the City Council." The Opera House building is now the Cochran Judicial Center, which houses the City Courthouse.

The New Theater Corporation:

Albert Shultz (president), Fielding Olivier (secretary-treasurer) and Julius Witz formed the New Theatre Corporation. The New Theatre building was designed by T.J. Collins and opened in 1913. It showed burlesque and vaudeville shows, as well as silent movies. About 1925, the partners sold a controlling interest in the corporation to the theater corporation of Isaac Weinberg, a Jewish businessman from Lexington. Isaac Weinberg later sold 75 % of his interest to Universal Pictures Corporation. The New Theatre first showed a "talkie," "The Jazz Singer" in 1928.



The New Theatre Building before the fire. Note the three stories. (From the collections of Richard and Thomas Hamrick and David Schwartz)



The Staunton newspaper ran a contest to find a new name for the building in 1934. The contest was won by Mildred Klotz, Jacob Klotz's daughter, who came up with the title of "The Dixie."⁷² A fire in January 1936 destroyed much of the building. The rebuilt building, with only two stories instead of three, looks very different from the original.

The End of Immigration

Laws restricting immigration to the U.S. that were passed in 1921 and 1924 effectively ended the great wave of Jews coming into this country. The Staunton businesses that Jewish merchants owned are gone. But the buildings and pictures are still here to tell the story.

Staunton is the place to get things.
For comfort things...for rest things...
Things to help you look best in...
All these things and many more,
You can get in Staunton stores.⁷³

Bibliography

Abram Kronsberg, grandson of Abraham and Johanna Weinberg

Douglas Degen, grandson of Jacob and Annie Klotz

Thomas and Richard Hamrick, former proprietors of Hamrick Funeral Home, Staunton

David Schwartz, proprietor of Camera and Palette, Staunton, son of Philip Schwartz and grandson of Moses and Rhea Walters

Melanie Summerfield Lee, telephone conversation 1/28/14, great-granddaughter of Morris (also spelled Maurice) Summerfield and Anne Davison Summerfield.

Endnotes

¹ Temple House of Israel archives; cited hereafter as THOI archives.

² Fannie B. Strauss, "The Jewish Community in Staunton", *Augusta County Historical Bulletin*, Fall 1972.

³ 1870 Philadelphia Census, Ward 20 District 65.

⁴ Minutes of the meeting 1 February 1885, THOI Archives.

⁵ Staunton City Deed Book 9: 191, December 1887.

⁶ *Staunton Dispatch and News Historical and Industrial Edition*, January 1906.

⁷ Strauss, "The Jewish Community in Staunton."



- ⁸ Marriage records, Staunton January 20 1897 p. 19 line 851.
⁹ Abram Kronsberg, personal communication, 1995.
¹⁰ *The Crusader and the News-Leader*, (Staunton, 1940).
¹¹ *Staunton Dispatch and News Historical and Industrial Edition*, January 1906.
¹² *Staunton City Directory* 1973, advertisement p. 43.
¹³ *Staunton City Directory*, 1895.
¹⁴ United States Census, 1870 and 1880
¹⁵ Obituary in *Staunton Spectator and Vindicator*, 14 September 1899).
¹⁶ Chataigne's *August County Virginia Gazetteer and Classified Business Directory* for 1888)
¹⁷ *Staunton City Directory*, 1922.
¹⁸ *Staunton City Directory*, 1910-1911.
¹⁹ U.S. Census, Hanover, Maryland, 1900.
²⁰ Douglas Degen, grandson of Jacob Klotz, personal communication, 1995.
²¹ *Staunton City Directory*, 1904-1905; Sanborn maps, 1904 and 1906.
²² *Magazine of Industry and the Daily Leader Review of Augusta County, Virginia; Industrial, Financial, and Commercial Interests* (June 1912): 27.
²³ Staunton Deed Book 25: 279.
²⁴ *Staunton City Directory*, 1916-17, 1920-21, 1922-23.
²⁵ Oral history, Tom and Dick Hamrick.
²⁶ Sanborn map 1929 and Staunton City Tax Records, 1930.
²⁷ Staunton Will Book 21: 362.
²⁸ Personal communication, Thomas and Richard Hamrick, July 2013.
²⁹ *Representative Enterprises of the South and Southwest, The Valley of Virginia; Staunton, Va.* (Richmond, Va.: Townsend and Cornman, 1884.



The Temple House of Israel, Staunton's Jewish Temple, can be seen on the left at the far side of the Hardy parking lot. The photograph was taken from the corner of Beverley and Market Streets. (From the collections of Richard and Thomas Hamrick and David Schwartz)



- ³⁰ Ibid., 23.
- ³¹ Staunton Deed Book 6: 554, January 1, 1875.
- ³² Sanborn map, 1886; Staunton City Tax Records, 1885.
- ³³ *Staunton City Directory* 1904-1905.
- ³⁴ *Staunton Spectator*, August 8, 1865).
- ³⁵ Staunton Court of Hustings Records.
- ³⁶ *Staunton Spectator*, 29 August 1865.
- ³⁷ (Staunton Deed Book 4: 490.
- ³⁸ U.S. Census, Staunton 1870.
- ³⁹ *Representative Enterprises of the South* (1884), 20.
- ⁴⁰ *Staunton Spectator*, 13 May 1884
- ⁴¹ *Staunton Spectator* 2 May 1884.
- ⁴² U.S. Census, Baltimore, 1900.
- ⁴³ *Staunton Spectator*, Vol. 67, Number 32, March 1890.
- ⁴⁴ receipt from the collection of Richard and Thomas Hamrick.
- ⁴⁵ Records of Emmanuel Episcopal Church, Staunton.
- ⁴⁶ Personal communication of David Schwartz, son of former THOI treasurer Philip Schwartz.
- ⁴⁷ Staunton Deed Book 3:250.
- ⁴⁸ Temple House of Israel Archives.
- ⁴⁹ Staunton Deed Book 9: 474.
- ⁵⁰ *Staunton Spectator*, 8 December 1868.
- ⁵¹ *The Vindicator*, 24 July 1863, 1: 3.
- ⁵² *Staunton Virginia – Past, Present and Future* (Staunton Development Company, 1890).
- ⁵³ "White Star Mills," *Staunton News Leader, Augusta County Bi-Centennial*, 1940).
- ⁵⁴ *Staunton City Directory*, 1904-5.
- ⁵⁵ Staunton Deed Book 21: 536.
- ⁵⁶ Staunton City Tax List, 1912
- ⁵⁷ Obituary in *The Staunton News-Leader*, 3 June 1925.
- ⁵⁸ "Staunton," *Encyclopedia of Southern Jewish Communities*, (Institute of Southern Life).
- ⁵⁹ *Moody's Manual of Railroad and Corporation Securities*, 3: 736.
- ⁶⁰ *Staunton City Directories* 1904-1905, and others.
- ⁶¹ *Staunton Dispatch and News*, 13 March 1908.
- ⁶² Strauss, "The Jewish Merchants of Staunton."
- ⁶³ Minutes of the first congregational meeting, Temple House of Israel Archives.
- ⁶⁴ U.S. Census, Staunton, 1880, 1900, 1910.
- ⁶⁵ *Staunton News-Leader*, 3 March 2014.
- ⁶⁶ *Staunton City Directories*, 1914-17.
- ⁶⁷ Staunton Deed Book 34: 481.
- ⁶⁸ Oral history of David Schwartz, grandson of Moses and Rhea Walters.
- ⁶⁹ Ibid.
- ⁷⁰ U.S. Census, Staunton, 1880.
- ⁷¹ Staunton Deed Book 20: 227, 27 August 1909.
- ⁷² Oral history of Douglas Degen.
- ⁷³ *Staunton Dispatch and News*, 15 November 1909, 5.



Letters from AMA

John Alvin Taylor, Jr., 1941-1942

Letters transcribed and editorial comments written
By Nancy T. Sorrells

Editor's note: When transcriber and author Nancy Sorrells was going through her deceased father's papers she found an intriguing bundle of letters from 1941 and 1942, when her father was eleven and twelve years old. The letters involved his year at Augusta Military Academy in Fort Defiance, located along U.S. Rt. 11 north of Staunton.

I am actually the fourth generation of my family to end up living in the Staunton-Augusta County area after not being born here. It is a long and winding family path. This article is about how the third generation, my father John Alvin Taylor, Jr., wound up here and how the Augusta Military Academy came to be a part of that story.

Let's start with the first generation, my great-grandparents Andrew Vincent Griffith and Nan Strother Reed Haley Griffith. Both were born in Fauquier County, Virginia, (he in 1881 and she in 1877). We always referred to them as Granddaddy and Mema. At the age of thirteen Granddaddy was apprenticed as a tailor and at the age of eighteen, having completed his training and taken his five hundred dollars freedom dues to New York City to obtain advanced tailoring training, he felt ready to open a business and get married. Vince and Nan Griffith were married in 1903 and they moved to Culpeper, Virginia, where he opened a tailoring business. The couple had a baby boy who died shortly after birth and is buried in Culpeper. Then in June of 1905 my grandmother, Nancy Gertrude Griffith was born. There were no more children. The tailoring business did very well and soon a satellite store was opened in Staunton as Griffith and Brooks. Within a short time the young family moved to Staunton and wound up at 314 Sherwood Avenue where my grandmother was raised and went through the Staunton public school system, attended Mary Baldwin, and graduated from Templeton Business School.

In June of 1926, Nancy Gertrude Griffith (the second generation) was working temporarily as a secretary for the Staunton branch of the



Maryland Casualty Company, when a handsome new insurance agent from Accomack County, Virginia, came to town. John Alvin Taylor and Nancy Gertrude Griffith were married in October of 1927. Eventually "Jack" Taylor's insurance business took him and his family to Greensboro, N.C., where he headed up the firm of Gay & Taylor. The couple had a daughter born in 1928 who was injured at birth and died in 1934. In June of 1930 my father John Alvin Taylor, Jr., was born. And in September 1939 George Griffith Taylor joined the family.

The happy family was settled into a nice brick cottage in Greensboro in early 1941 when tragedy struck. My grandfather, John Alvin Taylor, Sr., became ill and in six weeks was dead of pancreatic cancer. As can be expected, my grandmother was devastated emotionally and financially. Thus began a period of about three years in which the three Taylors went hither and yon, moving from their brick house to first one apartment and then a second smaller apartment. John, who was ten, and baby George, who was not yet two, stayed alternately with their grandparents in Staunton, their grandmother and aunts and uncles in Norfolk, and even their paternal uncle in Pocomoke City, Maryland. My grandmother, later known to the family as Mommom, was trying to pick up the financial pieces of her life. Having only ever worked for a short time as a secretary before meeting her husband and getting married, she felt the need to go back to school and brush up on her secretarial skills. She returned to Staunton and took typing classes at Dunsmore Business School and then went to New York City for a shorthand class. Eventually in 1944, after having been separated for much of three years with different relatives, the three Taylors closed down their life in Greensboro and landed permanently in Staunton, where my dad and Uncle George grew up. (The third generation not to have been born in Staunton, but to wind up there!)

The focus of this article, however, is what happened to my father, who turned eleven in June of 1941 just a few months after his father's death, as he and the family tried to recover from the shadow of tragedy. Growing up we had heard bits and pieces of the family story, but it was only after my father's death in June of 2012, when I found a batch of letters, that I was able to put this all together.

It seems that in the summer of 1941, my grandmother, Mommom, and father moved to Sherwood Avenue to stay with her parents. George might have spent the summer there but by the fall was in Pocomoke City with his late father's brother, Uncle Vernon. The purpose of being



Col. Thomas J. Roller, left, and his brother Maj. Charles S. Roller, Jr.

in Staunton was for my grandmother to attend Dunsmore Business School and brush up on her typing. George was too young to attend school, but, as fall approached, the question would have arisen about my father's schooling. Just whose idea it was for my father to attend Augusta Military Academy (AMA) in Fort Defiance is uncertain, but my great-grandfather probably had a lot to do with it. He was good friends with Major Charles Roller whose family founded the school and operated it. Apparently the conversation leaned toward the idea of "making a man out of my father." It does not seem likely that my father, who had just lost his father and was now living in a strange town, had a lot of say in the matter. And perhaps my grandmother might not have had much say in the matter either. She was living under her parents' roof and, from letters in this collection, it is obvious that Granddaddy was the one footing the bill for his grandson's schooling at AMA.

And so in late September young Johnny Taylor found himself in a military uniform in a strange school, surrounded by people he had never before seen. The school year was 1941-1942 – AMA's seventy-seventh session of the school. The college-prep military school was accredited by the state board of education as well as the Southern Association of Accredited Schools and Colleges. In its school catalog from that year AMA was advertised as being "One of the Honor Military Schools of the United States."¹

AMA's history reaches back to the years just after the Civil War. When Charles Roller came back from the war he tutored several young veterans in the Mt. Sidney area and eventually opened the Augusta Male Academy in the 1870s. By the 1879-1880 school year he had fifteen boarders and thirty day students.² Eventually the "M" was changed from male to military but uniforms were not compulsory until 1905. Roller's health declined in the early 1900s and he asked two of his sons,



Charles and Thomas Roller, to come home to Fort Defiance and take over the school. Thomas, a University of Virginia graduate, was teaching classical language at the University of Memphis. Charles, a Virginia Military Institute graduate, was teaching and coaching football at Furman.³ They did as their father asked and when their father died in 1907, his two boys were at the helm, with Thomas as the school's "Colonel" and Charles as the "Major." They were still at the helm when my father arrived in 1941.

Under their leadership, the school's reputation grew rapidly. Young men came to AMA from across the country as well as overseas. There were a lot of cadets of Hispanic origin – Cuba, Mexico, Central America, and South America – who hailed from wealthy families who wanted their sons to learn leadership, military skills, and English. The year that my father spent at AMA saw thirty students from Cuba alone on the cadet roster.⁴

"The cadets represent families of culture and refinement and form a remarkably fine body of boys whose moral standards are high," noted the school catalog for the 1941-42 session. Although there were certainly young men who were sent to the school for disciplinary reasons, they were weeded out by the Roller family if they did not straighten up academically and socially. The catalog made that perfectly clear: "The school is by no means a reformatory, and a boy of confirmed bad habits cannot remain in the school. We would prefer no boy to enter who does not intend to be a gentleman."⁵

The Letters

The bundle of letters that fell into my possession is not large and is certainly incomplete. In addition to the letters from my father to his mother, there is one back to him from his mother, and one from his Uncle Vernon. There are also several letters from Major Roller to my great-grandfather, my grandmother, and to my father.

The first letter was written in the summer of 1941 before the school year started. My father was obviously staying with his grandparents on Sherwood Avenue in Staunton and my grandmother was down in Greensboro trying to put her life back together. She had already moved the family from their house to an apartment. Before the year was over, she would downsize again to an even smaller apartment. Tippy, mentioned in the letter, is the family's terrier dog.



Postmarked July 10, 1941

TO: Mrs John A Taylor, Dolly Madison apts., Greensboro, North Carolina,
Apt. C6

RETURN ADDRESS: John Taylor, 314 Sherwood Ave., Staunton, Virginia

Wednesday

Dear Mother

I am going to the movie tomorrow to see "Billy the kid".

*Grandaddy could'nt[sic] get off this weekend, so let me know weather[sic]
you are coming up or not. If you can't I'm coming home Sunday*

*I got your letter today and I sure hope tippy gets well so he can come
up here with us*

Love, from your oldest [above arrow] and best [superscript] son

Johnny

This short letter was probably the first one that my father sent home from the Augusta Military Academy, thus marking the beginning of a long year for a lonely boy. At this point his mother was back in Staunton, probably taking a typing class at Dunsmore Business School. The AMA school year usually started sometime around September 22 and ended with graduation around the first day of June.

(postmarked Sept 25, 1941)

TO: Mrs. John A. Taylor, 314 Sherwood Ave., Staunton V.A.

RETURN ADDRESS: John Taylor Jr, Agusust[sic] M.A.

Dear Mother,

I am having a very good time here. But I am a little bit homesick.

*I wish you would like for you to come and see me, and bring my Bible
and and my raido[sic].*

Try to come and see me soon.

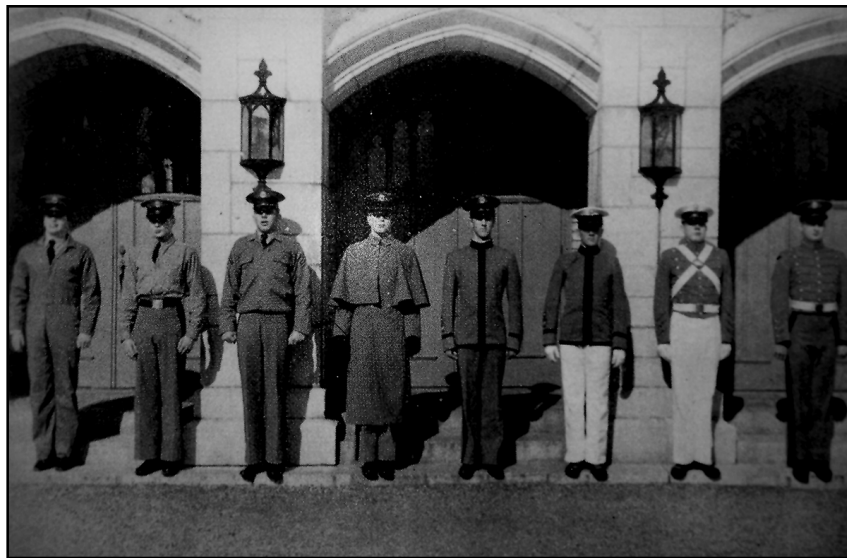
Love from your son

John

My father was a junior cadet and a first-year cadet, which would have made life challenging. Although he was in the younger group of students, he was by no means the youngest. Technically AMA accepted boys who were twelve years old up to their early twenties. However, unofficially, AMA accepted boys as young as first graders. My father was eleven, but was placed in the sixth grade.⁶ No matter the age, all



Cadet John Taylor in his uniform and the jacket that later came to be called the Eisenhower jacket. (Courtesy the Taylor family)



The 1942 AMA catalog featured these cadets modeling every variation of the AMA uniform that each cadet had to wear depending on the occasion and the season. (Courtesy the AMA museum)



students followed the same daily military and class schedule, including learning how to drill and carry rifles. All the cadets wore uniforms that included a variety of pieces. First-year cadets experienced an atmosphere similar to basic training in the military. The boys had to eat square meals, meaning they had to sit at the table with their backs straight and eyes fixed forward. Without looking down at their plates, the boys had to use their utensils to bring the food straight up to face level and then at a ninety-degree angle into their mouths.⁷

According to the school yearbook, the *AMA Recall*, my father was a private in Company D. There were about 250 students at AMA that year.

(Postmarked October 1, 1941)

TO: Mrs. J.A. Taylor, 314 Sherwood Ave., Staunton, Virginia

RETURN ADDRESS: John Taylor, A.M.A., Fort Defiance V.a.

Sept 30, 1941

Dear Mother,

I wish you George and I could be togher[sic] tonight.

I am still in the six grade here, and the work is still hard.

I have a real bad cold, get some afternoon off and maby[sic] I can come home and spend a night with you. Sure am home sick.

I got your letter today. Sure was glad to see it.

Love from your son,

Johnny

Several letters reference being sick or being in the school infirmary. My father was an asthmatic and allergic to many things as a child. In fact his allergies had caused him to miss an entire year of elementary school during which time he was home schooled by his mother.

At AMA the infirmary was set apart from the main barracks. Sick call was "blown" every afternoon and all the cadets who did not feel well had to report to the infirmary for examination and treatment. "Every precaution is taken to safe-guard the health of the cadets," noted the school catalog. Dental health was an entirely different story, however. Parents were warned that they "should send their sons to school with teeth in good order that dentists may not be visited during the session."⁸

The next letter is actually from Major Roller to my grandmother in North Carolina about my father's health and about his having to travel to Charlottesville to see a specialist. Clearly from the tone of the letter Major Roller and my grandmother were struggling over the best health



treatments for my father. Keep in mind that he had only been at AMA about three weeks at this point.

(no envelope)
Augusta Military Academy
Fort Defiance, Virginia
October 9, 1941
Mrs. J.A. Taylor,
314 Sherwood Ave.,
Staunton, Va.

Dear Mrs. Taylor:

I am in receipt of your letter of October 8th, and this is to advise that I will allow John to go to Charlottesville with you next Wednesday, October 15th at noon to see Dr. Shotwell.

Under the circumstances you have mentioned I think it would be wise to let John continue the work under Dr. Shotwell in Charlottesville; however I hope he will not have to make very many trips over there for his own comfort.

I note what you say about Dr. Brown and the next time John goes to Staunton, I will tell him to go to see Dr. Brown.

The letter from Dr. Ravenel, I have turned over to the school physician. I also note you wish Dr. Brown to be called in case of a severe attack of asthma.

John seems to be getting along nicely and I hope his session will be not only very profitable but also very pleasant.

Very sincerely yours,
Maj. C.S. Roller, Jr.

The family shuffling included the Taylor relatives in eastern Virginia and Maryland as well as the relatives in Staunton. John's little brother George spent some time with his uncle's family, Uncle Vernon, the brother of his recently deceased father, John Taylor, Sr. Apparently all the relatives were alerted to Johnny's enrollment at AMA. In this letter Uncle Vernon Taylor, who lived in Pocomoke City, Maryland, on the Eastern Shore, and whose family was keeping George, writes to his young nephew John in hopes of cheering him up.

(Postmarked October 10, 1941)

RETURN ADDRESS: Vernon G. Taylor, 914 Second Street, Pocomoke City, MD.

TO: Cadet John Alvin Taylor, Jr., Augusta Military Academy, Staunton,



Virginia, (Fort Defiance Va)
914 Second Street,
Pocomoke City, Md.,
October 9, 1941
Dear John:-

Please excuse me for not writing to you before. I have been thinking lots about you and asking your Mother frequently how you were getting along at A.M.A.

She tells me you have a little been a little homesick, but otherwise you are getting long fine and have been promoted to the sixth grade. I am very glad to hear this and feel very proud of my little nephew. Keep up the good work and before long you will forget all about being homesick, and can look forward to coming home for Thanksgiving and Christmas holiday, and a nice long vacation next summer, during which time we want to have you come to Pocomoke and stay just as long as you want.

V.C., Jack and Ray are all busy at school. They often speak of you and wonder how you like drilling. First thing you know you will be one of Uncle Sam's fine big soldiers. Would you like to be a soldier when you get old enough? I was a soldier for nearly two years during the last World War. Of course that was long before you were born. I had some great experiences both in this Country and during the year I was in France trying to shoot Germans. Didn't have much luck at that though.

Little George is well and getting along just fine. He often calls for you and says "John's gone". I know we are going to miss him a lot when your Mother comes for him. We would like to keep him for our own, but guess that is impossible.

I was down to see your Grandmother Taylor last week and she was asking me about you and wanted to know how you liked your new school. She wants you to write her. So John, as a special favor to your old Uncle Vernon, sit down and write a nice letter to your Grandmother. She will appreciate it and it will mean so much to her to know that your Daddy's little boy is thinking of her. Also send her a card occasionally. I may go down there again tomorrow. Grandmother isn't well, as you know, and I want to spend as much time with her as I possibly can.

Be a real good boy and let me hear from you just as soon as possible. Did you get my card a few days ago?

Aunt Carrie, V.C., Jack, Ray and George all send love to you.

Lovingly

Uncle Vernon

As you probably will remember, your Grandmother's address is -Mrs. Josephine Taylor, 806 Baldwin Avenue, Norfolk, Va.

Cadet life at AMA was not filled with luxuries. The rooms were



spartan with iron bunk beds, thin mattresses, and a single light bulb hanging down from the ceiling. My father recalled that one had to be careful not to touch that dangling light bulb because it sometimes delivered an electrical shock. There were two cadets per room and each cadet had his own table, closet, shelf, light, and bunk bed. Rooms were inspected frequently, sometimes several times a day, and had to be in ship-shape. Although the hallway floors in the dormitories were simply cement, they gleamed because the cadets had polished them until they shimmered. The coal-fired furnaces did little to keep the cadet rooms comfortable and stories abound of cadets sleeping in their winter overcoats to stay warm.⁹

As is obvious from reading through these letters, the small stack that survives does not represent all the letters that went to and from my father during his 1941-42 school year at AMA. One of the most significant events in that year, and one of which my father spoke of every December 7th was Pearl Harbor. To be at a military school when the nation was attacked was apparently quite a moving event. The Roller brothers apparently called the cadets into the auditorium to deliver the news of war and to calm them down as well. Many of the upperclassmen who graduated the following spring went directly to the war front. By the time the war was over in 1945, fifty-five AMA graduates would perish in battle.¹⁰ My father recalled the shock that swept across campus when news of the attack was heard. Many of the older cadets wanted to enlist immediately.

My father mentions the holidays in this letter. The AMA catalog is very specific that holidays were not meant to be very important to the boys who should concentrate on their school life. My father obviously felt otherwise! Cadets were given only one day's break at Thanksgiving, two weeks at Christmas, and were furloughed for five days for a "rest period" in March following examinations.¹¹ The latter is apparently the holiday to which he is referring.

AMA was considered a college preparatory school. The Junior School, where my father was enrolled, was for cadets from the fifth through the eighth grade. All boys were expected to spend seven hours a day in the schoolroom. Classes were small, on average fourteen in a class, and every student was required to attend study hall every evening. The study hall room was large, outfitted with fifty-seven windows for good ventilation, and was overseen by two teachers on duty to "super-vise" and "give needed assistance."¹²



John Taylor poses in his winter overcoat. The photo at left was taken in front of his grandmother's house while the one on the right was taken in front of the AMA barracks, top. (Photos courtesy of the Taylor family)



(Postmarked February 16, 1942)

TO: Mrs John A Taylor, Box #1613, Greensboro, N. Carolina

RETURN ADDRESS: Cadet John Taylor, Augusta Military Academy, Ft.

Defiance

Feb. 15th, 42

Dear Mother,

I got your letters, and the reports, and was very glad to hear from you. Am sending them back now. I thought they were pretty good. didn't[sic] you?

When you write to me, I, wish you would tell me something about George. You never say a word about him.

How are you getting along in your school work? I think you have improved in typewriting a whole lot.

I have come in contact with a boy that had mumps, but the doctor says he doesn't think I will get them. So don't worry about me.¹³

I got out of the infirmary[sic] a little while this after noon. Granddaddy took me up to the house for a few hours. Mema had a box of candy just like you sent me. I will finish both boxes before you can say jack Robinson. I sure thank you for the dollar and the candy.

A lot of new boys came in last week. One is from New York. He has the funist[sic] accent. I can't hardly understand anything he says. There is another one from Philidepia[sic] Penn. I like him pretty well.

How do you like that 95 on history on my report card! I think that was pretty good, don't you? I'm going to try to do even better next time.

There are only 30 more days until spring holodays[sic] four weeks. I'll be glad when they come wont you?

I didn't[sic] have to go to prade[sic] today, I whatched[sic] it. they've changed it a little bit. Why don't you come up some weekend, be glad to you.

I am getting ready to go to the movie now

Love from,

Johnny

P.S. This is the longest letter I've written you

AMA had a bank for the cadets, but parents were warned not to indulge the young men by depositing too much money in the bank for them. Students could withdraw money in order to buy things in Staunton when they visited. The school also maintained a small store where the cadets could buy items such as sheets, towels, underwear, uniform ties, and various toiletries. The following letter, from AMA to my grandmother, acknowledges the receipt of some money deposited into my father's AMA bank account.



John Taylor, right in top photo, and an unknown friend, stand in the AMA farm field behind the school. (Note the evidence on the ground of livestock being in the field!) The photo at bottom left shows Taylor alone in the same field. The Roller house, depicted at right, currently houses the AMA museum but in 1941 it was the Roller home. The pointed roof of the building's tower can be seen in the background at the right in the top photo. (Photos courtesy of the Taylor family)



(Postmarked May 7, 1942)

H.R. Fifer, Capt., A.M.A., Asst. Bookkeeper, Augusta Military Academy,
Fort Defiance, Va.

Mrs. J.A. Taylor, Box #1588, Greensboro, N.C.

Dear Mrs. Taylor:-

*I wish to acknowledge receipt of and to thank you for your check for
\$10.00. This has been deposited in the school bank to John's credit for
his spending money and enclosed you will find our receipt.*

Very truly yours,

H.R. Fifer, Capt. A.M.A.

Asst. Bookkeeper

—Also enclosed is a receipt for ten dollars made out to Mrs. J.A. Taylor
from Augusta Military Academy dated May 4, 1942.

Readers will notice that in this letter my father talks about going to town
on Tuesday instead of Monday. Monday was the only full day of rest for
the cadets. They could take a bus into Staunton and relax. Families could
visit their sons from Saturday afternoon until Monday at supper roll
call.¹⁴ Other than that, families were expected to stay away from the
school so that the boys could concentrate on their school life.

(Postmarked May 7, 1942)

Cadet John Taylor, Augusta Military Academy, Fort Defiance, Virginia

Mrs J. A. Taylor, Box # 1613, Greensboro, N. Carolina

May 6th. 42

Wednesday

Dearest Mother,

I am seanding[sic] you a little Mother's Day present.

*I would have liked to have gotten you something better, but you know
it's kind-a hard to get hold of money around here. I am sending you some
paper to remind you to write to me more.*

*The Government inspectors[sic] were here Monday and Tuesday and
can you guess what. I and another boy were picked out to be there
orderlys. [sic] They were two Cols. One was a grouchy man and the
other a real nice man. Thanks goodness I got the nice one. I will tell you
all about it when I see you again. (over)*

*We went into town Tuesday instead of Monday because of Govern-
ment inspection. I bought new shoes then.*

I made 100 in Spelling today.

How are you and your job getting along.

With Love Your Son, Johnny



The school had a barber on post to cut the boys' hair. He was known simply as "Benny the Barber" although some of the boys nicknamed him "Benny the Butcher" because of the quality of the haircuts.¹⁵

Obviously the war, now in its sixth month, had now crept into every facet of people's lives as is evidenced by my father's reference to being able to get gasoline.

My father also references his fatigue coat, part of his military uniform, in the next letter. The AMA cadets had at least seven different uniforms for different activities and seasons. There were everyday uniforms for the summer as well as the winter and full dress uniforms for dress parade, also with variations according to the season. Pictures of my father show him in his everyday blouse uniform with the jacket that later came to be called the "Eisenhower" jacket. Other photographs show him in his gray tunic with a stripe down the front – something that had been a part of the AMA uniform since the nineteenth century. This was called the fatigue uniform and is what was referenced in my father's letter. A dressier uniform top was the forty-four button jacket, called the coatee. Trousers were gray with a black stripe in the winter, but in the spring, summer, and fall the boys wore white "duck" pants for parade. Full dress uniforms also included white bands crossed in an "X" across the boys' chests. These were called cross dykes. They also had full-length winter overcoats as well.¹⁶

The cost of the junior uniforms in all variations was \$140 a year. This included: one overcoat, one fatigue coat, one dress coat, two pairs gray trousers, two caps, four gray shirts, three pairs of white trousers, one gray jacket, two laundry bags, four black ties, four pairs white gloves, one pair woolen gloves, one white cap cover, one breast plate, one belt plate, one regulation belt, and one roll of belting. Tuition was \$600 a year, and books and stationery were another twenty dollars. The total of \$760 a year, which is presumably what Granddaddy paid for his grandson to attend AMA that year, included academic instruction, military instruction, athletic instruction, board, laundry, and laboratory fees.¹⁷

(postmarked May 15, 1942)

Cadet John Taylor, Augusta Military Academy, Fort Defiance, Virginia
Mrs. J.A. Taylor, Box #1613, Greensboro, N. Carolina

May 15th, 1942
Dearest Mother,



AUGUSTA MILITARY ACADEMY
FORT DEFANCE, VIRGINIA

May 15TH, 1942

Dearest Mother,

I am sorry that I have not written you before this, but on Monday morning I wrote you a letter, and then put it in my fatigue coat pocket so I could mail it in town. Just a few minutes ago I found it in my coat pocket, I had forgotten to mail it.

I got a hair cut today. it was getting pretty long.

Well there are only about $1\frac{1}{2}$ more weeks left of school here, and only about $2\frac{1}{2}$ more weeks left until come home.

John Taylor's letter written on AMA stationery to his mother on May 15, 1942. (Courtesy of the Taylor family)



I am sorry that I have-not written[sic] you before this, but on Monday morning I wrote you you a letter, and then put it in my fatuege [sic] coat pocket so I could mail it in town. Just a few minutes ago I found it in my coat pocket, I had forgotten to mail it.

I got a hair cut today. It was getting pretty long.

*Well there are onley[sic] about 1 ½ more week left of school here, and onley[sic] about 2 ½ more weeks left until come home.
(over)*

Major Roller has gas for the Mothers to go home from finals. But we had to know by this afternoon. I forgot to ask you Sunday so what do you think we can do? Do you think you can get any gas?

Write and tell me what you are going to do about this.

Lots and Lots of Love,

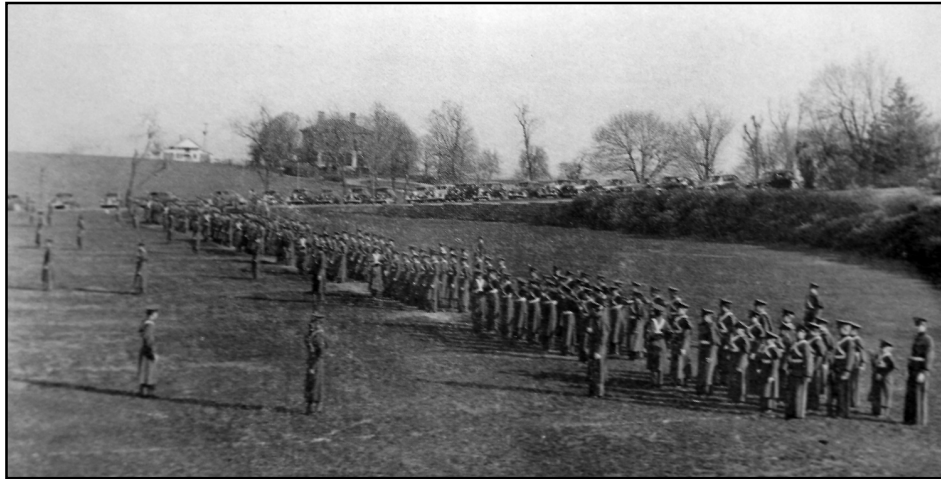
Johnny

P.S. I have been making very good grades this week.

There is no doubt that my father benefited from the disciplined academic study at AMA. His classes that year were hygiene, math, English, geography, history, and spelling. Although it might not be entirely obvious from his letters, his best grades were in spelling in which he finished the year with a ninety average. He finished the year with an eighty-six in hygiene, eighty-fives in math and English, an eighty-four in history, and an eighty-three in geography. Those were very good grades as a seventy-five was required for promotion and an eighty for certification. For his level of study, he had six English books, used *Cheney's History of England* in history class, and studied from *Whitbeck's High School Geography* for geography. In addition to their academic work, the cadets were organized into a battalion of four companies and studied military science and tactics.

Fortunately, the AMA museum had a copy of my father's cadet record with his monthly grades. The record also lists the number of demerits my father received: one in the first semester, three in the second semester, and three in the final semester. According to those in the know, this was a surprisingly few number of demerits, which could be given for anything from not having your shoes shined properly, to not having your bed made properly, to talking out of turn. Cadets with demerits were not allowed to go into town on Monday. Instead they had to march in front of the barracks, forty-five minutes for each demerit.¹⁸

The following letter was written on Sunday. Note the fact that my father had watched a movie the night before starring Mickey Rooney.



AMA students on parade in 1941. (Courtesy AMA museum)

Augusta Military Academy Cadet Record															
1941-42		(Year)		John A. Taylor Jr		Presby.		11		June 5-1929		Smith			
		(Name)				(Religion)		(Age)		(Date of Birth)					
2nd St Poconoke City, Ma.		(Address)		Mrs. John A. Taylor		(Parent or Guardian)									
445-88. Greenboro, N.C.															
SUBJECTS	Oct.	Nov.	Dec.	1st Sem.	Jan.	Feb.	Mar.	2nd Sem.	Apr.	May	Final Exam.	Monthly Average	Ex. Average	Gen. Average	REMARKS
History	82	80	86	86	85	84	90	82	85	90	40	86	86	86	
Math	88	85	85	85	90	95	85	80	90	90	89	85	85	85	
Eng.	85	83	85	85	88	91	88	88	85	93	82	85	85	85	
Geog.	80	80	80	80	87	89	87	85	90	90	85	83	83	83	
Art	88	85	85	80	95	93	90	90	96	88	81	86	84	85	
Spelling	90	83	82	83	90	92	90	90	70	92	93	92	88	90	
TACTICS															
SPELLING															
DEMERITS	0	1	0		1	1	1		3	0					C-9

John Taylor's grades and demerits for the 1941-1942 school year at AMA. Note that his birth year of 1929 is incorrect. He was born June 5, 1930. (Courtesy AMA museum)



Showing movies to the cadets was a treat presented at the school every Saturday night. The catalog touted that tradition as one of the benefits of the school: "Every Saturday night talking pictures are shown in the school-auditorium. These pictures are high-class and up-to-date and are selected by the school authorities."¹⁹

(postmarked May 18, 1942)

Cadet John Taylor, Augusta Military Academy, Fort Defiance, Virginia
Mrs. J.A. Taylor, Box # 1613, Greensboro, N. Carolina

May 17th, 1942

Sunday night

Dearest Mother,

Parade has been over about 35 minutes now and I have had a little supper. Grandaddy, Mema, and George came down to see Parade, Mema has lost quite a bit a waight[sic] but George is growing all the time. Mema and Grandaddy have taught him to say "Yes Sir" and "Yes Mam." He got mixed up and said Yes Mam to me.

George said that he talked to you on the phone Sat. night and said that you would (over)

be up next week end if you could get away.

Did you get my report card? If so what were my grades? I have been making very good grades this week I haven't made anything below 90.

There was a good movie on last night. I wish you could have seen it. It was Babes on Brodway[sic] with Mickey Roney[sic].

There are onley[sic] 17 more days, and only 2 weeks and 3 days, that doesn't seen long does it? I'll soon be in good old Greensboro again.

Write to me soon and tell me how thing are coming along there.

Lot of Love, Johnny

(added at the top of the front page: *If you see John [apparently a friend in Greensboro] tell him to write to me.*)

Several of Johnny's letters mention the Sunday parade. This was part of the established ritual at AMA. Sunday routines were as follows: room inspection, march in formation to Augusta Stone Presbyterian Church to attend services (Catholic and Jewish cadets were bussed into Staunton for religious services.), and have a parade drill that was often watched by members of the community. After parade, many of the cadets went home with family during the afternoon. The meals at the academy on Sunday were cold meals as the kitchen staff had the day off as well. Unlike some other military schools, parades happened at AMA despite the weather. There are photographs of the students on the parade grounds in snow.²⁰



Although AMA prided itself as being non-sectarian, high ethics were important. "We use every means in our power to teach high moral, and religious ideals," according to the catalog. To that end, each day began with a short prayer service. The catalog made a big deal of the fact that Augusta Stone Church was only two hundred yards from the school. At that time my father was Presbyterian, the same as his father, and he remembered fondly the times at Augusta Stone. This letter to his mother included a bulletin from a church service there.

(Postmarked May 21, 1942)

Cadet John Taylor, Augusta Military Academy, Fort Defiance, Virginia

Mrs. J.A. Taylor, Box # 1613, Greensboro, N. Carolina

May 20, 1942

Dearest Mother,

I have promised myself that I will write to you every two days, and I am going to try to live up to it.

I went into town Monday, and I had a very good time. But I almost[sic] missed the bus and that would have been to bad.

My writing not be so good because I am using a little stub of a pensel[sic].

We got a new teacher today I don't think he is so good. He is about 65 years old. just when we get (over)

(on the back) A good teacher he has to go.

Write to me.

Lot's of Love Johnny

P.S. onley[sic] 15 more days

(Also enclosed with the letter is a church bulletin from Augusta Stone Presbyterian Church for Sunday April 26, 1942.)

Perhaps the most significant event that occurred while my father was at AMA was December 7, 1941, Pearl Harbor. By the end of the school term, ten of the teachers had joined the military or left to participate in the war effort. There were only eighteen academic teachers at the school. In the previous letter and the next letter my father talks about one of the new teachers who arrived late in the school year (May 20, 1942). He was less than impressed by the man. "We got a new teacher today I don't think he is so good. He is about 65 years old. just when we get a good teacher he has to go," he wrote. Clearly the year had been a revolving door of instructors as the nation geared up for the war effort.



[3 letters in one envelope postmarked May 27, 1942]

Cadet Taylor J., Augusta Military Academy, Fort Defiance, Virginia

Mrs J.A. Taylor, Box #1613, Greensboro, N. Carolina

May 22^{ed}, 41

Dearest Mother,

I haven't heard a word from you in several days, but I guess you are pretty bussy[sic] getting ready to move, and working at the same time. I guess you are moving today. You said that you were going to move on the 22^{ed}.

I am writing this letter durring[sic] a bad thunder storm. It has been raining here for about four days straight.

This new teacher has improved a little bit, but he is still not as good as the other teacher.

We are all getting ready for exams here. They come on (next page) Wednesday 27th. Wish me good luck, because thats what I'm going to need.

Time is going so fast, don't you think? Just think of it only 11 more days, and then I'll be home, in good old Greensboro again.

I was sorry to hear that you won't be able to get up for finals, but I guess we can have a better time at the beach or some place like that.

Write to me as soon as you get this letter.

Lot of Love, Johnny

P.S. All my envelopes have melted and stuck and it hard to open them without tearing them.

P.S. turnover.

(on back side) P.S. I spilled my ink all over the table and on some of my stationary, as you can see on the edge of this peace[sic] of papper.[sic]

You may have those films developed that you found in my pocket book if you want to. Write and tell me how they come out

Obviously this letter from my grandmother was a response to the previous letter. My grandmother was moving to a smaller, less expensive apartment in Greensboro in an attempt to make ends meet financially.

Sunday Night

Dearest Johnny-

I was very happy to have your letter when I went to the post office tonight. You guessed it I moved Friday and such a mess you have never seen.

It looks something like livable now but it doesn't some how seem like



home – yet – Perhaps I'll like it better when you can be with me part of the time. I really enjoyed the Dolly Madison.

I am wishing you lots and lots of luck on your exams. Just do the best you can that is all anyone could ever ask of you. Will write you again in a few days –

Lots and lots of love Mother

Although my father rarely mentions the food at AMA, it was a big deal when advertising the school. Like many institutions of the time, AMA had its own farm that supplied fruit and vegetables as well as beef, veal, mutton, and pork to the boys. There was also an AMA chicken house with 1,500 hens who laid 300 eggs a day. A local dairy delivered forty gallons of milk to the school in the morning and another forty in the evening to feed the growing boys. The AMA catalog boasted that the food was “well cooked, and chosen with special wholesomeness.”

Also living on the farm were horses. In the 1940s the school still had a cavalry and the dress parades were reviewed on horseback.²¹

May 24th, 1942

Dearest Mother,

Well there are onley[sic] 11 more days left. That sure does sound good to me, how about you?

I saw a good picture last night. I had seen it once before.

Grandaddy and Mema came down this afternoon and brought George to see the Parade. George was feeling fine. He gets cuter every time I see him.

I don't have much to say except that I am feeling fine.

Write to me, once in a while.

Lots of Love, Johnny

P.S. over (on back side)

P.S. Write and tell me if you think I ought to stay the night of June 3rd. at Mema's of go on that same day.

The Cadet Waiter that my father speaks of in this next letter was one of the underprivileged students who were at the school through a tuition assistance program. They had to work off their tuition costs by waiting on the other students. These boys were housed in a separate area. However, the Cadet Waiters were not the only cadets doing work. Major Roller was not averse to tapping cadets for work at any time, such as when coal cars pulled into the nearby Fort Defiance railroad station and manpower was needed to unload the coal for the school's furnaces.²²



May 26th, 1942

Dearest Mother,

I saw Carter Fabrics truck with Greensboro, N.C. and New York N.Y. Writen [sic] on it. I didn't know that Carter Fabrics was in New York too.

I am planing[sic] to stay in my room all this afternoon to study, because exzams[sic] start tomorrow.

I would like for you to send me 50 cents for the Cadet Waiter that waits my table. Do you think you can get it to me before friday.

*I got your letter to day, sure was glad to hear from you
(OVER)*

Don't forget to write and tell me weather or not I should come on home on the 3erd, or stay on over until the forth, at Mema's. Are do you think you can come up for me. Write and tell me.

*Lots of Love,
Johnny*

P.S. Onley[sic] a week left.

The school year had ended and my father was back home in North Carolina. Whether or not a decision had already been made about my father's return to AMA is unknown, however, I feel certain that my father had already made up his mind that he would not be returning. He was back in the city he loved, reunited with his friends, and he even had a newspaper route. Whether or not my grandmother provided the recommendation about AMA is something we will never know.

(no envelope)

*Augusta Military Academy
Fort Defiance, Virginia
July 8, 1942*

*Mrs. John A. Taylor,
Greensboro, N.C.*

Dear Mrs. Taylor:

This is to ask a favor of you.

Ths morning we had a request for our catalog from Mrs. Robert Spilman, %Rock Creek Mills, Statesville, N.C.

If you would drop a line to this lady and give her some first hand information regarding the school, we certainly would appreciate it. John certainly progressed nicely in every line last year and we are very proud of his work.

We are now working on our enrollment for the coming year and I



*sincerely trust that you are going to return John.
Please fill out the application we sent you some time ago and
return it to this office in the very near future.*

*With kind regards, I am,
Very truly yours,
Maj. C.S. Roller, Jr.*

By late July my father had obviously convinced his mother that he needed to stay in Greensboro because she wrote to Major Roller informing him that my father would not be returning. The reasons were that my father wanted to attend school in Greensboro and felt he would do well after his year's work at AMA. Apparently there was also some discussion about my father's asthma and the need to stay close to the doctors in North Carolina. Years later my father recalled that, bottom line, he had threatened to run away should he be returned to AMA!

For his part, Major Roller desperately wanted my father back and he wrote to his good friend, my great-grandfather Andrew Vincent Griffith, practically begging for my father's return. Having such a studious and well-disciplined young man would be a feather in the school's cap and he was not willing to give up without a fight. Major Roller went to great lengths to explain how the school had made accommodations because of the war including hiring older teachers.

In the end Major Roller offered to lower the tuition rate for my father, should he return. How much influence Major Roller had or how much Granddaddy had over my other father is uncertain. All I know is that he did not return to AMA.

(no envelope)
*Augusta Military Academy
Fort Defiance, Va.
August 6, 1942*

*Mr. A.V. Griffith,
112 E. Beverley St.,
Staunton, VA*

Dear "Griff":

A few weeks ago Mrs. Taylor wrote me that your grandson, John, was very anxious to go back to the Grammar School in his home town. Both of them thought that now he had probably learned to study and to make fine progress.



As a boy expert of 42 years experience, I want to tell you this will be fatal. John was one of the finest boys in the junior department here. He passed high on all of his subjects, he had a "White Page" and a Certificate of Honor relative to his conduct and discipline. He was the finest young man to handle that we have had in the school for years. I want him again.

Last year, circumstances over which we had no control, required us to change different teachers about 10 times. They were called in the service or to do war work.

This year we have taken on 7 or 8 experienced teachers who have been teaching from 5 to 15 years. They are exempt from service on account of age or physical disability and I am glad to tell our patrons that unless something terrible happens from the war situation, there will be no change to make in our faculty. The experienced teachers are costing us a plenty too.

The new head of the junior department has had quite a few years in this work and has specialized in it, therefore I am very confident that he can put over an excellent piece of work here.

You and I have been friends for a third of a century and I am not willing to allow anything to keep John from continuing[sic] on here until he graduates.

#2

He has all the uniforms necessary except a few replacements. He has quite a few books and he has worlds of friends in the cadet corps and among the old faculty. He has passed thru his year of new cadetship and he enters this year as an old cadet and he certainly would make a good non-commission officer.

If he goes to a new Grammar School he has all new surroundings and has to make new friends. This is not fair to this fine boy.

Our pride is always at stake when we lose a good boy. If the price I made you last year is too high, write me and I am sure I can suit you. I will do any thing you wish.

With kind regards, I am,

Very sincerely yours,

Maj. C.S. Roller, Jr.

A few weeks later Major Roller must have sensed that Cadet John Taylor was not coming back, but he pulled out all stops by writing my father directly and trying to pressure him to return. He ended the letter by telling my father that the school now had a famous football coach at the helm. I will never know, of course, but I could guess that the final sentence did nothing to endear my father to AMA or Major Roller. I never knew my father to care anything about football.

(postmarked August 22, 1942)
Augusta Military Academy, Fort Defiance, Virginia
Mr. John A. Taylor, Jr., Box #1588, Greensboro, N.C.

*Augusta Military Academy
Fort Defiance, Va.
August 21st, 1942*

*Mr. John A. Taylor, Jr.,
Box #1588,
Greensboro, N.C.
Dear John:-*

I feel sure that you are returning to Augusta this year but as yet have not heard form[sic] your mother. Please have her write me so I can put your name on our roll as the school is filling rapidly.

We will have about ten new teachers all of whom have had from 5 to 25 years experience and we will not lose them this year as all of them are beyond the 35 year age limit.

The Government has informed me that even though a boy may reach the age of 18 or even 22 years that they will not remove him from our accredited R.O. C.T. school.

We have also secured the services of Mr. J.A. Tomlin, the famous coach who has been with Seaton Hall Academy for the past ten years, as our head coach.

*With kindest regards, I remain.
Sincerely your friend,
Maj. Chas. S. Roller, Jr.*

And then it was over. Major Roller apparently received the final rejection from my grandmother. John was NOT returning to AMA. His health was apparently cited as one reason. My grandmother apparently also could not resist one final complaint about the revolving door of teachers from the previous year. It appears that this was not a new topic of discussion as it was also mentioned in the letter from Major Roller to my great-grandfather. Clearly it was a sore point between the school and my family. I am sure that my grandmother immediately shipped off as many of my father's AMA clothes as possible for resale. I do distinctly remember, however, that he kept at least one pair of white duck pants. How do I know? Because I got to wear them when I was eleven.

(Postmarked September 2?, 1942)
Augusta Military Academy, Fort Defiance, Virginia



Mrs. J.A. Taylor, Box 1613, Greensboro, N.C.

*Augusta Military Academy
Fort Defiance, Va.
Sept. 2nd, 1942*

*Mrs. Nancy Gertrude Griffith Taylor,
Box 1613,
Greensboro, N.C.*

Dear Mrs. Taylor:-

Your letter received and I was so sorry to hear about John's hay fever. I trust that he will soon recover from this.

In regard to our Junior department I would say that we have a teacher of ten years experience and that he is exempt from the draft. It is true that we were very much mixed up with our teachers last year owing to the fact that so many of them were called to the service. This year we are sure that we will not be troubled with this unless something very unforeseen should happen.

If you will have John's uniforms cleaned and pressed and send them to us we will be glad to try and sell them for us.

*With kindest regards, I am,
Very truly yours,
Maj. Chas. S. Roller, Jr.*

Handwritten below the typed letter: *You have a fine son
CSRJr.*

The family spent one more year in Greensboro. In the summer of 1943, the three Taylors left Greensboro for good. My father entered the Norfolk public schools in the fall of 1943 and stayed with his aunt and uncle there. He was once again enrolled in the sixth grade. His brother George was taken back to Staunton and stayed with Granddaddy and Mema. My grandmother went to New York City for a refresher course in shorthand. In 1944 the three Taylors moved to Staunton permanently. My father was enrolled in the sixth grade for a third time, but was quickly jumped up to his freshman year at Robert E. Lee High School. Four years later, upon my father's graduation from high school, the three moved to the Washington, D.C., area so my grandmother could find better employment opportunities.

In the end was AMA a good thing or a bad thing for my father? He certainly was homesick and miserable much of the time as can be expected



after what he had been through. However there is no doubt that he did learn to study at AMA and the military training almost certainly gave him a slight leg up a few years later when he joined the Air Force during the Korean War. In the end his experience probably was a little of both – good and bad – as many experiences are. And, just like all experiences, it helped shape the person he became. After serving in the Korean War, my father went to the University of Maryland on the G.I. Bill where he met my mother. They married and he found work in Washington, D.C. But soon after they were married my parents bought property in Augusta County and eventually moved to the Shenandoah Valley, bringing their children with them and making me the fourth generation to have not been born here but to wind up here. Ironically all those from the previous three generations died here and are buried back in that Culpeper cemetery where my great-parents sadly buried their first little infant who died over a century ago.

I have learned a lot about AMA and about my family's winding path from the small bundle of letters written by a lonely boy over seven decades ago. However, I wish I had read them while he was still alive.





Endnotes

¹ Augusta Military Academy 1941-42 catalog for the 77th Session, housed in the AMA archives. Hereafter "AMA catalog."

² Bob Bradford, *The Roller School: A loving history of Augusta Military Academy*, www.amaalumni.org.

³ Ibid.

⁴ Ibid., and interview with alumnae and museum volunteer Ben Zinkhan, class of 1960. Interview October 28, 2014.

⁵ Ibid.

⁶ Ironically it was the first of three years in a row that my father would attend the sixth grade. First here, then back in Greensboro, N.C., in Norfolk, and then to Staunton where the school system caught onto to him and bumped him from the sixth grade straight to being a freshman at Robert E. Lee High School.

⁷ Crysta Stephenson, executive director, AMA Museum, interview October 28 and 29, 2014.

⁸ AMA catalog.

⁹ John Taylor and Stephenson.

¹⁰ Plaque at the AMA museum and letter from Col. Roller.

¹¹ AMA catalog.

¹² Ibid.

¹³ In fact my father did not get the mumps until he was an adult in the late 1960s when he contracted the disease from his children and became violently ill.

¹⁴ AMA catalog

¹⁵ Zinkhan.

¹⁶ AMA catalog and interview with Stephenson.

¹⁷ AMA catalog.

¹⁸ Zinkhan.

¹⁹ AMA catalog.

²⁰ Stephenson.

²¹ AMA catalog.

²² Ibid.



The John Lewis Homesite and Commemoratives (Bellefonte, Fort Lewis, Grave, Monument, Historical Markers)

By Richard H. Dilworth, Sr.

Eighth generation descendent of John Lewis, early
settler of Augusta County, Virginia, through the line of
John's eldest son, Thomas Lewis (March 2014)

Editor's note: One of the first settler families in Augusta County was the Lewis family—John and Margaret Lewis and their children. The family had fled from the north of Ireland where John Lewis had apparently murdered his landlord after a disagreement over the rent. Lewis became one of the leaders in the newly-formed county and much of his life can be tracked through documentary evidence. However, many myths have grown up around the Lewis family as well. At times it is hard to separate the legend from the fact. In this article, descendant Richard H. Dilworth, Sr., attempts to sift through the stories and document the facts of his famous ancestor.

Much has been written over the years about John Lewis, a great deal of which is speculative at best and erroneous at worst. The following is an attempt to summarize the known facts regarding his homesite, burial place, monument and other commemoratives. Inevitably, some parts of this account are also conjectural, but I trust that I have made plain that which is assumption as opposed to certainty.

This is not intended to be a commentary on the man himself; anyone interested in learning what little is actually known about John Lewis can do no better than refer to the early chapters by Mark W. Cowell of that excellent compendium, *The Family of John Lewis, Pioneer* (hereinafter cited as *Family*). Incidentally, although John Lewis is generally termed the first settler of Augusta County, Mark Cowell points out that it is "...quite unlikely that this area was first inhabited by a single, isolated family" This interpretation makes sense to me which is why I opted to refer to him as an 'early' settler.



Summary of the Homestead Ownership

An attempt to trace in detail the ownership of the John Lewis homestead and related acreage over a period of some 275 years would be a complex undertaking. The property records at the Augusta County Courthouse go back to 1745, and recorded real estate transactions involving John Lewis and his sons are legion. Fortunately for my purposes, I found in the Staunton Public Library a July 1992 article by Joe Nutt, a Special Writer for the Staunton *Daily News Leader*, outlining the chronological chain of ownership of the John Lewis homestead. Nutt's article and Mark Cowell provided the bulk of the following data regarding the proprietorship of this historic property.

The area in which the homestead is located was part of Spotsylvania County when John Lewis arrived there c.1732. It became part of Orange County in 1734, Augusta County in 1745, and finally part of the City of Staunton in 1987. Nutt says that Lewis first settled on the Middle River and that the family soon moved to the present location of the old homesite on the eastern side of Staunton about a mile north of US Route 250. He called the place Bellefonte (or Bellefont) variously translated as *beautiful*, *fine*, or *good spring*.

Initially, Lewis and the other contemporary settlers were actually squatters on land owned by the British crown. Then in September 1736 King George II granted 118,491 acres of this territory to a William Beverley and his associates ("gentlemen of eastern Virginia") which became known as Beverley Manor. On February 20, 1739 John Lewis purchased 2,071 acres of the Manor land for the sum of 14 pounds which was later written off by Beverley in recognition of the hospitality and assistance rendered by Lewis to prospective Manor settlers. Beverley clearly appreciated Lewis's contributions to the development of the Manor, and Lewis clearly benefitted financially from the relationship with Beverley. Within a few years almost all of the workable land within Beverley grant had been taken up, but Lewis's tract remained the largest of portion of Manor acreage owned by one man. However, his land acquisitions were by no means confined to his Manor property; he and others, including his sons, also obtained grants of thousands of acres of property to the west of his homestead.

John Lewis died in 1762 and his wife, Margaret Lynn Lewis, in 1773. The family retained title to the Bellefonte real estate until 1793 when it was deeded to Robert McCulloch. The property next passed from McCulloch's estate to D.W. Patterson in 1817. In turn, it was acquired from Patterson's estate by Stonewall Jackson's Quartermaster,



John A. Harmon and, according to Nutt "...it remained in his possession through the war [presumably the Civil War] years."

Nutt's account doesn't indicate whether or not there were other owners subsequent to Harmon prior to 1914, but in that year the homestead was bought by Henry ("Harry") Hevener who died in 1948. It has stayed in the possession of his descendents ever since, thus making this family the longest proprietors of the property by a considerable margin. The present owners are a great grandson of Hevener, Park Thompson, and his wife Sandra. Of the original 2,071 acres acquired by John Lewis, numerous land sales and gifts over the years had reduced the homesite to about 150 acres by 1992.

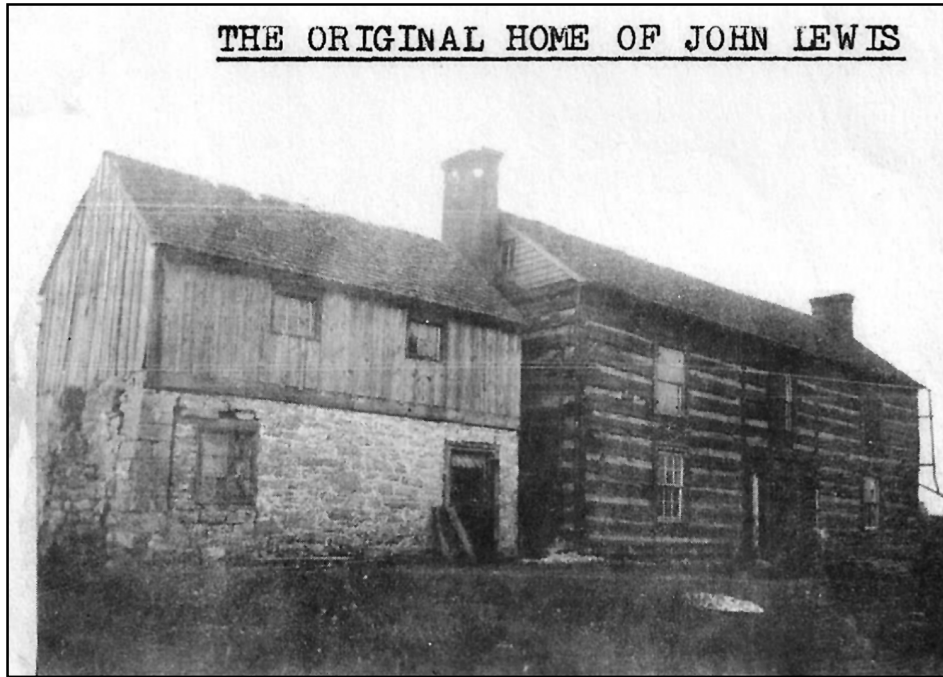
The Dwelling and 'Fort Lewis'

Presumably, the earliest home of the Lewis family on the Middle River (or wherever they actually first lived) would have been a temporary affair, perhaps consisting initially of tents and crude huts. Following their move to Bellefonte it seems reasonable to assume that a more permanent log home would have been erected, but there are no known records of what form this dwelling would have taken, or just when it would have been built. What is known is that the log house still on the site, although encased in brick and no longer visible from the outside, is almost certainly of a much later date than the original dwelling(s) would have been.

The caption designating the subject of the photograph "The Original Home of John Lewis" is indicative of the misconceptions that have prevailed for many years concerning these adjoining structures. As the following evidence appears to demonstrate, John Lewis, who having died in 1762, could never have lived in the log building on the right of the picture nor, in all likelihood, did any member of the Lewis family.

Apropos of a discussion of the ages of these buildings, in a December 1986 letter Mark Cowell gave the following report on a lecture he attended in Staunton by Professor Henry Glassie on "The Ulster Influence on American Vernacular Architecture." Cowell wrote:

Since he [Professor Glassie] is probably the world's leading authority on this and related topics, I especially wanted to get his opinion on the original home [Cowell showed Professor Glassie several pictures of the buildings including the one above] ...Henry Glassie thinks that it [the stone structure] definitely was a fort; the construction of the stone portion is typical of a stone fort or fort-house, not an ordinary stone dwelling house, and that it undoubtedly does date from the mid-18th century, unlike so many Appalachian-area buildings that were supposed to be that old but turned out not to



The lower portion of the adjacent building on the left, which was built of stone, gave rise to the appellation: 'Fort Lewis.' There are tales about it having been besieged by marauding Indians, but I am unaware of solid evidence to support them. Nonetheless, Indians did appear in the area from time to time, and it would hardly be surprising if they didn't view the increasing number of white settlers with suspicion, if not outright hostility. Under the circumstances, it makes sense to assume that this structure was intended to be used for defence if necessary, and possibly on occasion it was.

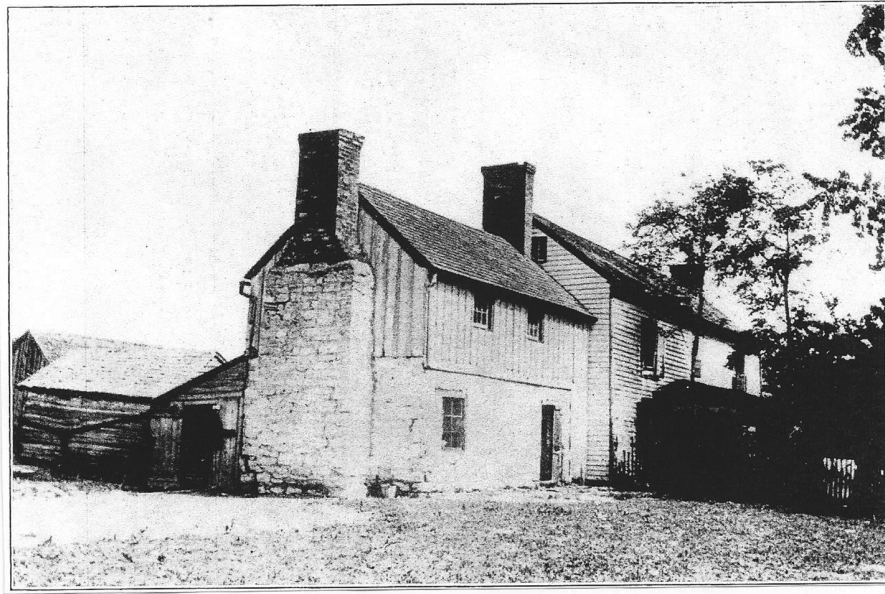
be. He called it an 'exciting' find and regretted its demolition. However, the 'half-stone, half timber' construction is anything but typical of Irish structures either in Ireland or in America [John Lewis had emmigrated from Ireland]. Professor Glassie had never seen anything like it elsewhere, and the upper storey was clearly an improvised rebuilding of recent vintage. The original fort probably had an overhanging upper storey of heavy logs – like the typical frontier forts except that most of them were built of logs from the ground up. Secondly, the adjoining log house probably dates from a considerably later period, and so probably was not the original home of Margaret and John Lewis [emphasis mine].

On the occasion of my visit to the property in April 2013 Park Thompson, the current owner, said that an 'expert' from James Madison University had come some time in the past to inspect the log dwell-



ing and had dated it to around 1820. This would seem to agree with Professor Glassie's guess that it probably dated from a considerably later period than the 'fort.' It seems likely therefore that:

- a) the 'fort' was built by John Lewis, but since this building was not very big
- b) at least some, if not all, of the members of this large family would have lived in another structure(s) on the site which preceded the existing log house, and



*These two photographs (the upper taken in 1915 and the lower in 1929) from Dr. John W. Wayland's *Historic Homes of Northern Virginia* give some idea of the evolution of both structures.*



c) while the 'fort' was considerably older than the existing log house, it was probably built after the first dwellings on the site.

Because D.W. Patterson acquired the property in 1817 he might well have been the builder of the existing log home. Nutt's account notes that "In 1837 and 1842 Patterson added improvements and new buildings on the land, according to tax records." Both photos show that the log structure had been encased in wood siding and a porch added to the front.

The upper photograph was taken the year after Harry Hevener acquired the property when the chimney at the left of the stone building was still standing. Hevener told Dr. Wayland that the chimney "... fell all of a sudden one day about 1920, when he and his family were away from home." The absence of the chimney and the addition of window shutters on the house are the only discernable differences in the external appearance of the buildings between 1915 and 1929.

Major alterations took place in the mid-1930s which completely changed the external appearance of the dwelling. Hevener had the log structure encased in brick, and I assume that the previous weatherboarding was removed at that time. The chimney between the two buildings was in such poor condition that it had to be rebuilt – Park Thompson said that as many of the old bricks as were useable had been incorporated in the replacement.

Apparently, by this time the old stone 'fort' was so dilapidated that it would have required major repairs to keep it from collapsing. Failing to get financial support from Lewis descendants to enable a reconstruction, Hevener had the structure taken down. In retrospect, this was a very unfortunate event as the 'fort' was by far the older of the two buildings and the only one of the two that was almost surely erected during the Lewises' tenure. It was also one of, if not the oldest, buildings in Augusta County and apparently of unique design, at least for the area.

However, it should be remembered that this happened in the depths of the Great Depression, and it seems probable that neither Hevener (who had no family connection to the place), nor the unknown Lewis descendants who were aware of the problem, had much if any spare cash at the time. Following the demolition of the 'fort' some of the stones were used to erect an outbuilding sited to the left rear of the house.

The Thompsons have recently made substantial further additions to the back of the house, but some of the old log structure is still visible in unplastered areas of interior walls. The logs and chinking mortar



between them still appear to be in remarkably good condition, no doubt aided by having been protected from the weather by the brick casing and, before that, by the weatherboarding.



The John Lewis property as it appeared in April 2013. Note the brick-encased log house and recent additions at the rear.

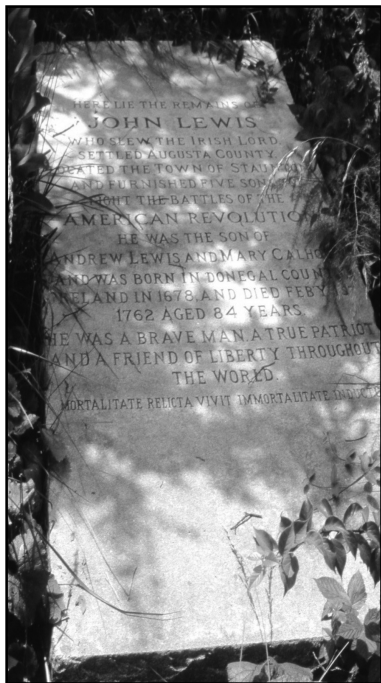


The outbuilding erected of stone from the old 'fort.'

When John Lewis died in 1762 he was buried on the hilltop above his home, and his grave is said to have been marked by a large slab of limestone. According to a January 22, 2000, article by Joe Nutt, this was replaced in 1850 by a granite slab, and in 1929 an inscribed marble slab, seen here, was placed over it:

Here lie the remains of
JOHN LEWIS
Who slew the Irish Lord
Settled Augusta County
Located the town of Staunton
And Furnished Five Sons to
Fight the Battles of the
American Revolution
He was the son of
Andrew Lewis and Mary Calhoun
and was born in Donegal County
Ireland in 1678, and died in Virginia
February 1st, 1762
He was a Brave Man, A True Patriot
And a Friend of Liberty Throughout
The World
Mortalitate Relicta Vivit Immortalitate Inductus

(Literally, "Mortality relinquished, he lives clothed in immortality")



The John Lewis grave today, left, and in the nineteenth century, top. (Courtesy of the author, left, and Janet Lembke)



No records of inscriptions that may have appeared on the previous markers are known to exist, but as Lewis Fisher, publisher and editor of *Family* has noted, the epitaph on this latest marker contains some inaccuracies. The existence of an eldest son named Samuel appears doubtful, and of the known four only Andrew can definitely be identified as having 'fought' in the Revolutionary War, although it is probable that his brother William did so as well (see *Family*).

Thus, it seems that whoever was responsible for the wording on the 1929 gravestone was ignorant of the facts, or at least more concerned with immortalizing the memory of an ancestor than in historical accuracy. The description of him as "... a friend of liberty throughout the world," as well as the Latin coda, certainly seem more than a little overblown.

His wife died some eleven years later and is believed to be buried with him but, oddly enough, there seems to be nothing there to mark her grave. However, Nutt comments that: "There are at least a couple of other small stones near the grave, unmarked, which could possibly be the headstones for the graves of John Lewis' wife, Margaret Lynn Lewis, their son Samuel Lewis, or others." I have visited the site at least twice since Nutt's article was written and have never noticed the small stones he mentions, but that doesn't necessarily mean that they aren't (or weren't) there.

Monument, Historical Markers, & Memorial Highway

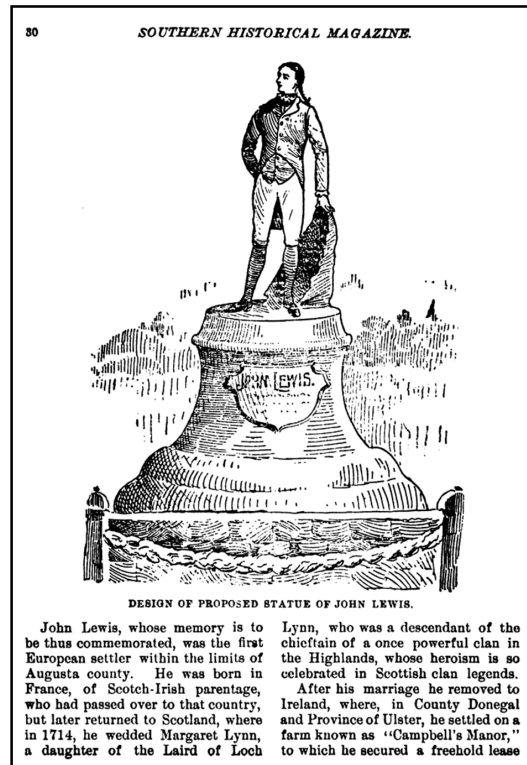
On November 10, 1891 the Staunton City Council unanimously approved a petition by twelve John Lewis descendants to reinter his and Margaret's remains in the city's Gypsy Hill Park. The petitioners stated their intent to raise private funds to erect a 'simple, noble, durable' statue or monument of 'Colonel Lewis' over the remains. An article in the January 1892 issue of the Southern Historical Magazine contained a drawing of the proposed statue.

Probably due to an inability to raise enough money to pay for the proposed statue, nothing seems to have come of the project, although the intent apparently lingered. An item in the May 1, 1907 issue of a trade publication entitled *Granite, Marble and Bronze* states that "An organization, known as the John Lewis Memorial Association ... has been formed. The purpose of the association is to perpetuate the memory of John Lewis, the pioneer settler of Augusta County, and the founder of the City of Staunton, by erecting a \$2,500 monument to his name."



Considering that \$2,500 in 1907 was the equivalent of about \$60,000 today, it's hardly surprising that funding this endeavor would have been a major stumbling block. In any event, to my mind the proposed monument (if it was the same statue contemplated in 1892) would have been inappropriate for the purpose. No likeness of John Lewis is known to exist, but even if one did the depicted attire of the figure is hardly representative of that of a man celebrated as a frontiersman. One would think that the buckskins worn by John's son Andrew on the latter's statue in Richmond's Capitol Square would have been more appropriate for the father.

Although the remains in the little graveyard atop the hill overlooking the homesite were not reinterred, John Lewis did finally get a monument in Gypsy Hill Park: a slim granite obelisk, with the inscription from his gravestone on its base, was dedicated to his memory on Memorial Day 1962. According to a local newspaper account some 200 persons, composed largely of Lewis descendants from twelve states outside Virginia, attended the ceremony. The sponsoring organization was now known as the John Lewis Society, and invested monies from earlier fund raising attempts were supplemented by at least one new major contribution to pay for the monument.





Mark Cowell and Lewis Fisher at the John Lewis monument in 1985.

An additional commemoration came around the same time when the section of Interstate 81 lying in Augusta County was designated the John Lewis Memorial Highway. Signs at intervals along the road exhibit his name, but doubtless very few passing travelers, or even locals for that matter, have any idea who he was.

Two Virginia Historical Markers had long preceded the highway designation. One was located below the homesite on State Route 254 and read:

BELLEFONT[sic]

The house on the hill to the north is Bellefont[sic], home of John Lewis, first settler in this region, who came here from Pennsylvania in 1732. The building, which was half dwelling, half fort, is thought to be the oldest occupied in the Shenandoah Valley.

This marker was removed a number of years ago, perhaps because someone questioned the accuracy of some of the text. It has not been replaced, perhaps at least in part because the road is used almost entirely by local traffic.



The second marker is still in place and is situated on U.S. 250 east of Staunton. It reads:

FIRST SETTLER

One mile north is the grave of John Lewis, first settler in this region, who came here in 1732 and died in 1762. He chose the site of the town of Staunton. His four sons, Thomas, Andrew, William and Charles, took an important part in the Indian and Revolutionary wars.

Note the errors about his sons' participation in the American Revolution: Thomas was fifty-seven years old when the Revolutionary War began and in any event was too near-sighted for active military service. Charles, the youngest son, did take part in Indian wars – in fact, he was killed at the Battle of Point Pleasant fighting the Shawnees in 1774, well before the outbreak of the Revolutionary War the following year. As previously noted, the record of William's service in the Revolution is unclear.

I hope that the foregoing will help to clear up at least some of the prevailing misinformation regarding this notable ancestor, and that in the attempt to do so I have not added errors of my own.



Fifty-seven quilts from four generations

By J.B. Yount III

Editor's note: The rich history of any community extends far beyond what can ever be told in the pages of history books. In fact, written histories sometimes can be very biased toward a small segment of the population, often limited to the observations of white men of privilege who had the education and the leisure needed to write extensively. The stories of women, children, ethnic minorities, and the laboring and impoverished classes are sometimes told only through their material culture. For Shenandoah Valley women of the eighteenth, nineteenth, and twentieth centuries, their "history books" were often made of textiles, especially quilts.

In the summer of 2014, the Augusta County Historical Society was able to sponsor a documentation project that examined an amazing family collection of quilts, owned by Society past president, J.B. Yount III. The collection, passed down through his family for four generations, provides a glimpse into the distaff side of his rural family that settled in the Rockingham and Augusta areas in the eighteenth century. As such, their textile "history book" helps enrich our understanding of Shenandoah Valley material culture.

A copy of the 400-page document resulting from that quilt documentation day, is now housed in the Augusta County Historical Society library. The report contains color photographs of each quilt as well as several other textile items, including a coverlet and a pillow, made by the women of Yount's family. The project could not have been carried out without the volunteer efforts of the quilt documentation team as well as the historical society volunteers who spent the day shuttling the textiles between Waynesboro and Staunton. And, finally, thanks should go to J.B. Yount III and his assistant, Caren Brosi for providing historical documentation for each quilt and organizing the collection.

Often we fail to recognize the intrinsic value of treasures that come into our hands. When I inherited my grandfather's home, "Maple Manse," near Madrid, Augusta County, Virginia, I discovered fifty-seven



hand-made quilts, many made by my grandmother, Myrtie Alice Stephens Yount (1867-1946), during the fifty-five years she spent there as a wife and mother.

Adding to my grandmother's handiwork were additional quilts made by her sisters, Martha Josephine Stephens (1843-1899) and Laura Belle Stephens (1862-1934); their mother, Mary Dovel Stephens (1829-1902); and their grandmothers, Barbara Yount Dovel (1797-1863) and Martha Burnsides Stephens Cowan (1806-1895). These artifacts had come from the Stephens home, "Stonewall Cottage," located on the Valley turnpike at Melrose, Rockingham County, Virginia.

During their long lives at "Maple Manse," my own aunts, Violette Belle Yount (1902-1992) and Hazel Alice Yount (1904-1991), had likewise done quilting of their own. Altogether these, along with a wedding quilt made for their mother in 1891 by her sister-in-law, Bettie Yount Steigle (1839-1908), formed an unusual heirloom collection.

Nancy Sorrells, who is an astute observer of Augusta County history, recognized the unusual age, breadth, and scope of this set of quilts and brought them to the attention of the Virginia Consortium of Quilters, which expressed interest in documenting them as a whole. This organization assembled an expert and energetic group of some twenty volunteers, including museum curators, professional quilt appraisers, and knowledgeable quilt experts from quilters' guilds around the state. These individuals spent a full day in the R. R. Smith Center for History and Art (home to the Augusta County Historical Society) photographing, measuring, assessing, and documenting the collection.

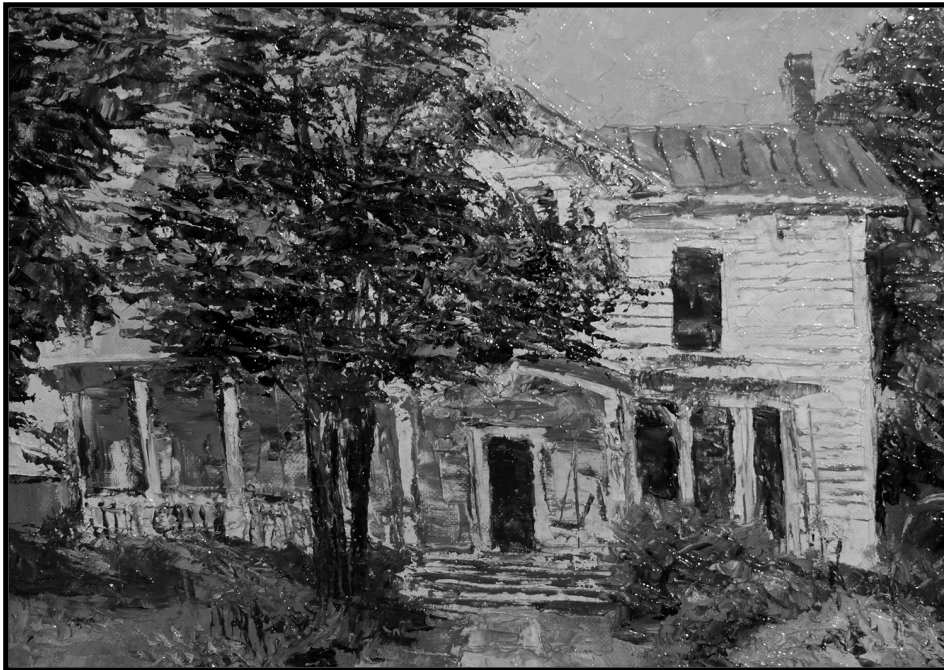
From their research I learned that there was more to be gleaned from viewing home-sewn works of art than simply admiring their color and design with an untrained eye. Because I realize that there are probably hundreds of antique quilts treasured in the homes of Augusta County citizens, it seemed relevant to publish a summary of their survey.

Volunteers included Gloria Craft Comstock, curator of the Virginia Quilt Museum in Harrisonburg, Va.; Karen Powers, American Quilters Society certified quilt appraiser, of State College, Pa.; Jacqui Beigie of the Virginia Quilters; and Virginia quilting experts from Charlottesville, Fredericksburg, Staunton, Waynesboro, Nelson County, and Lexington.

The earliest quilts were some of the best-preserved and most colorful. Barbara Yount Dovel, reared in the Mill Creek Church of the Brethren but married to a member of the Reformed or Presbyterian Church, displayed a remarkable talent in no less than eight pieces completed



*Stonewall Cottage in Rockingham County
(1895 family photograph)*



*Maple Manse in Augusta County
(oil painting by Waynesboro native Dr. George Speck)*



prior to her death in 1863. They were produced in a dramatic and colorful array of patterns, including Carolina lily, princess feather, tulip, basket, wreath of roses, and eight-point star.

Equally interesting was an 1853 quilt signed by Martha Burnside Stephens made in the double Irish chain pattern for her son and daughter-in-law, Richard Anderson and Mary Dovel Stephens, who were married in that year.

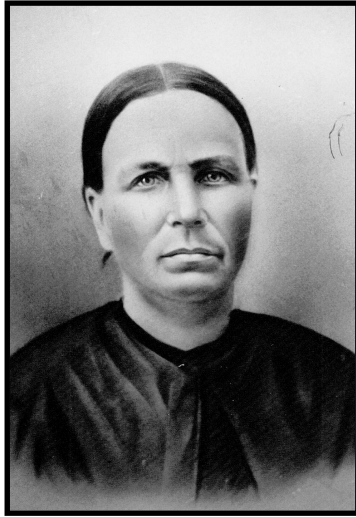
Mary, who spent all but the first seven years of her life at the “Stonewall Cottage” farm near Melrose, produced ten of the quilts in the collection. These passed to her daughter, Myrtie Yount, after the last of the unmarried Stephens sisters died in 1938.

The ladies evaluating the collection paid particular attention to an exceptionally fine quilt in the ocean waves pattern signed by Myrtie’s elder sister, Martha Josephine Stephens (1856-1899).

Some of Myrtie’s own twenty-six surviving quilts were plain and simple, some obviously made for utilitarian purpose rather than beauty, but others demonstrated rare talent and reflected things occurring in her family and the community. She created splendid crazy quilts of velvet, satin, and silk for her daughters, Eva and Violette, and her son Russell. She honored her husband, Waynesboro Auto Company founder J. B. Yount, with a special quilt incorporating an embroidered “Standard Oil Company” motif, reflecting the fact that he was that company’s early local representative.

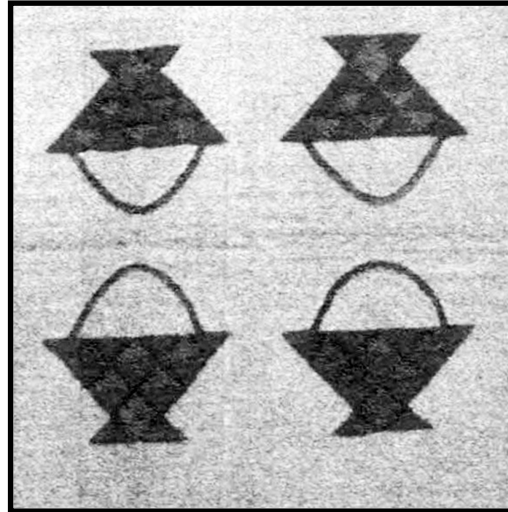
Several of Myrtie’s were apparently friendship quilts, incorporating blocks with initials of neighbors and relatives, and three of them included a number of silk ribbons from the “Michael Koiner Memorial Association,” dated October 12, 1892. These ribbons had been given to the several thousand Koiner descendants who dedicated the large marble monument to their ancestor that day in Trinity Evangelical Lutheran Church cemetery less than a mile from the Yount farm. Myrtie’s mother-in-law was a Koiner, or, as her branch of the family spelled it, a Coiner.

Following the example set by their mother, Myrtie, her daughters, Hazel and Violette Yount, added several works of their own and treasured and preserved the older items as long as they lived. When sample books of the corduroy, velvet, and velveteen fabrics produced by Waynesboro’s Crompton-Shenandoah Company came into their hands, they incorporated the exquisite pieces into handsome quilts in the block, four block, and patch medallion patterns, thereby also preserving a bit of Waynesboro’s mid-twentieth-century industrial history as well.

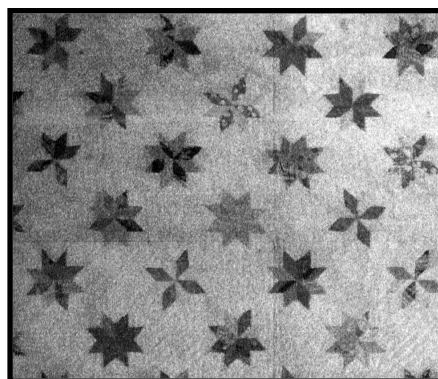
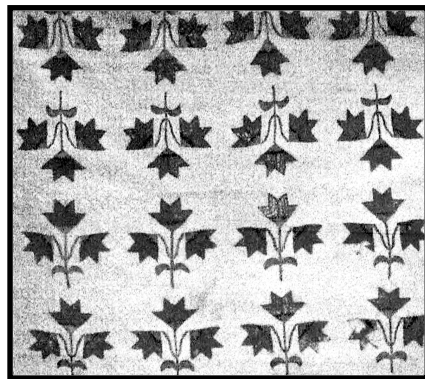
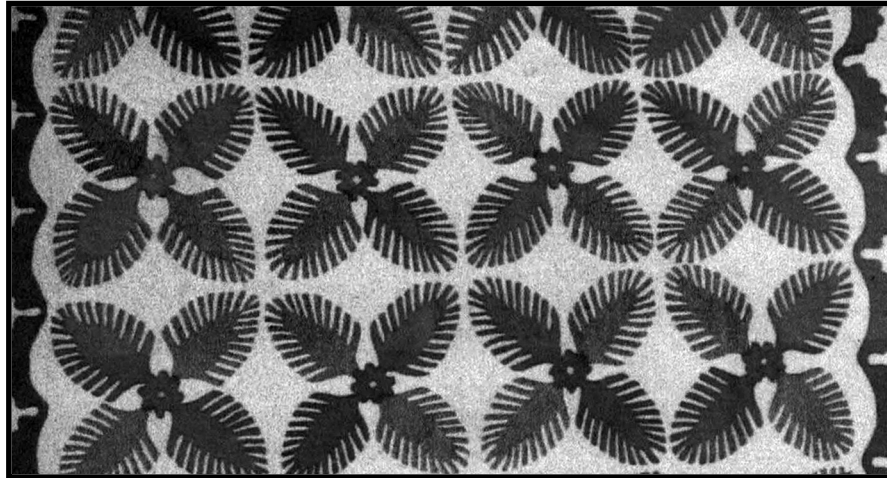


*Barbara Yount Dovel
(1797-1863)*

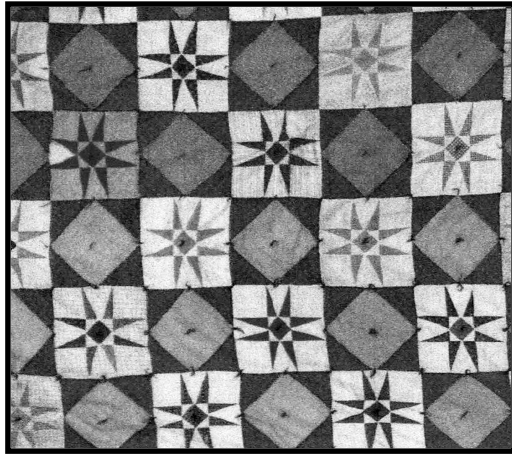
Quilts by Barbara Yount Dovel



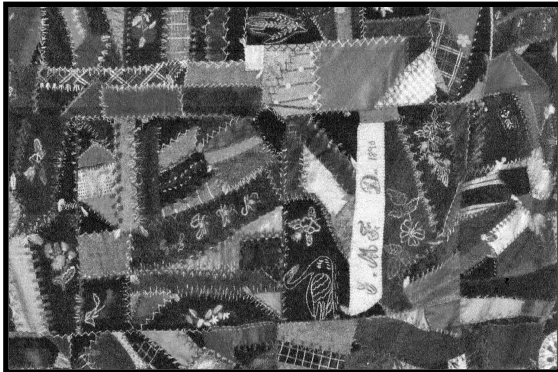
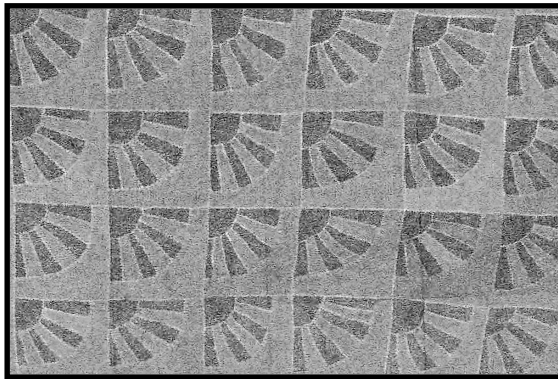
Basket Pattern



Middle quilt: Princess Feather Pattern; bottom left, Carolina Lily Pattern; bottom right, Eight Point Star-Block Pattern.



Quilts by Myrtie
Stephens Yount



Among the many quilts made by Myrtie Stephens Yount (1867-1946) were the Dove in a Window Pattern (also called Diamond in Squares) at top; Grandmother's Fan Pattern, middle; and a Crazy Quilt that included a ribbon from the Michael Koiner Memorial Association family reunion held at Trinity Lutheran Church in Augusta County on October 19, 1892, (see detail in bottom photo)



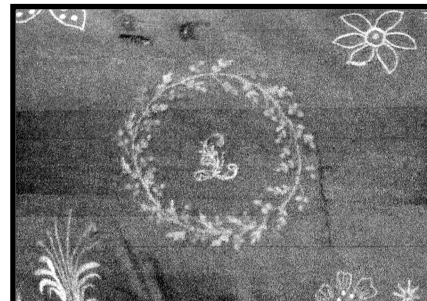
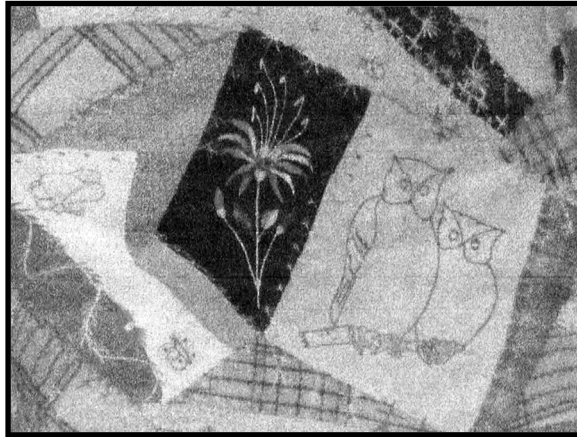


One quilt no longer in the collection was a perfectly-hand sewn cathedral pattern quilt finished by Hazel Yount near the end of her life. She often remarked that friends had told her she would never live to complete this difficult project, but she liked to say with a smile, "I did."

The names ascribed to the quilt patterns by these experts were fascinating to someone like me. I had listened with interest as my aunts displayed the quilts and told of their origins, but until the experts categorized and described each one down to the finest detail, they had been little more to me than pretty relics of a bygone age.

It never occurred to me that fifty-seven homemade items dating across a century or more and produced by four generations of one family would form a collection worthy of professional documentation and even come to merit the appreciation of an unskilled descendant unable to thread a needle.

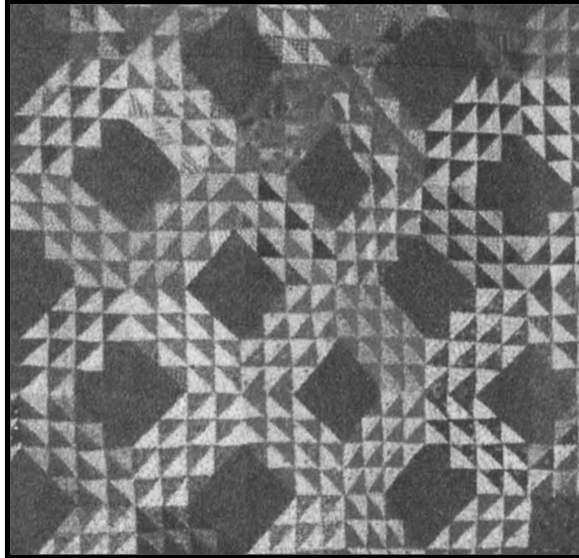
Pillows by Laura Belle Stephens



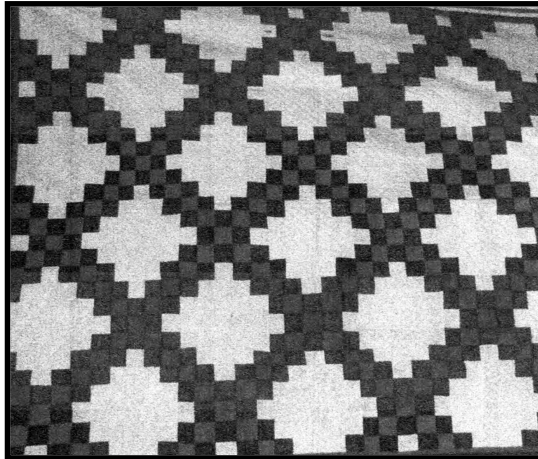
Details from quilted pillows made by Laura Belle Stephens (1862-1934)



*Martha Josephine
Stephens (1857-1899)
made this Ocean Waves
Pattern quilt.*



Quilts by the Stephens women

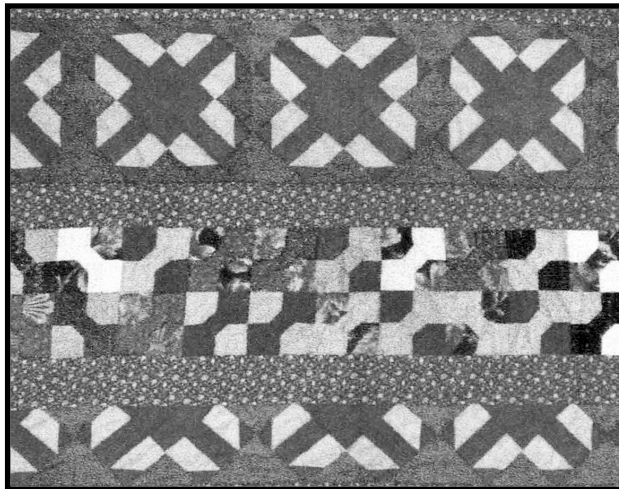
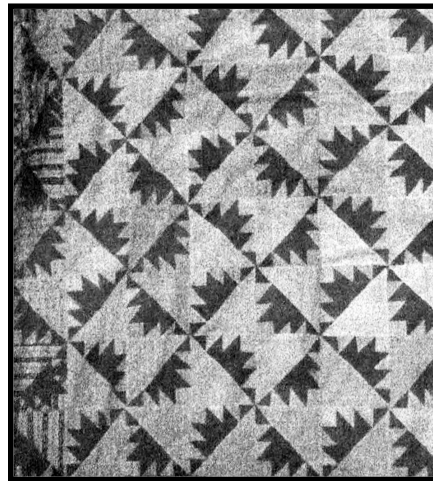
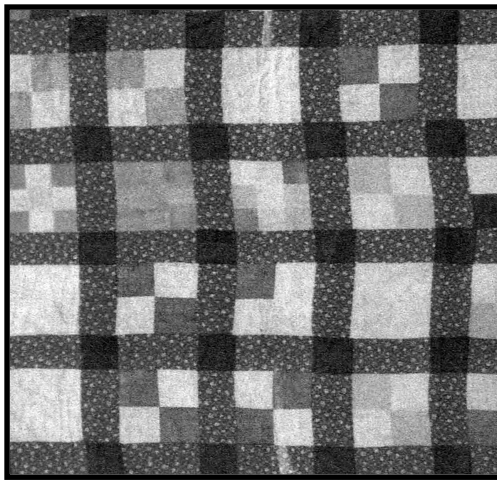
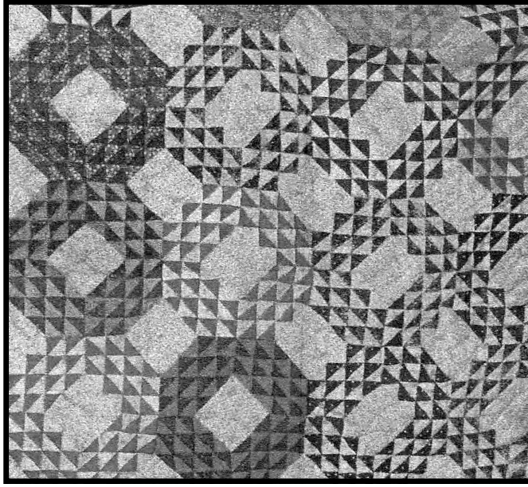


*Martha Burnsides Stephens is known to
have made one quilt, the Double Irish
Chain Pattern quilt above, that she cre-
ated for her son, Richard Anderson
Stephens (1831-1890) when he married.*





Quilts by Mary Elizabeth Dovel Stephens



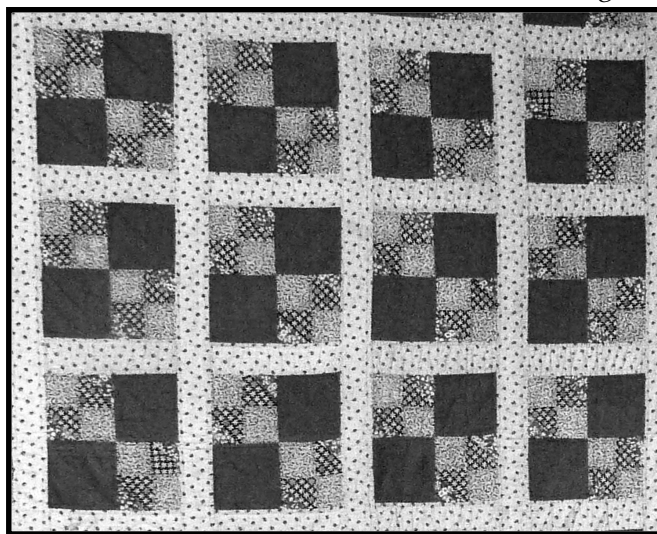
Among the quilts made by Mary Elizabeth Dovel Stephens (1829-1902) were the Ocean Waves Pattern, top left; a scrap quilt, middle left, a Kansas Pattern quilt, above right; and a T Block or Bow Tie Pattern, bottom left.

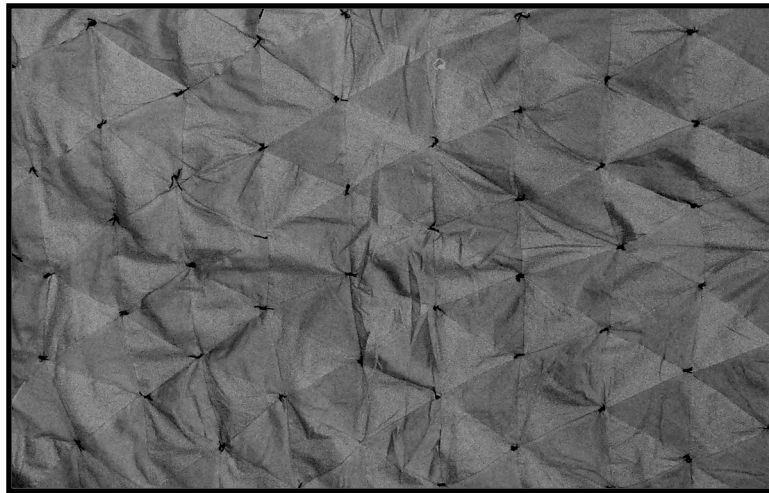
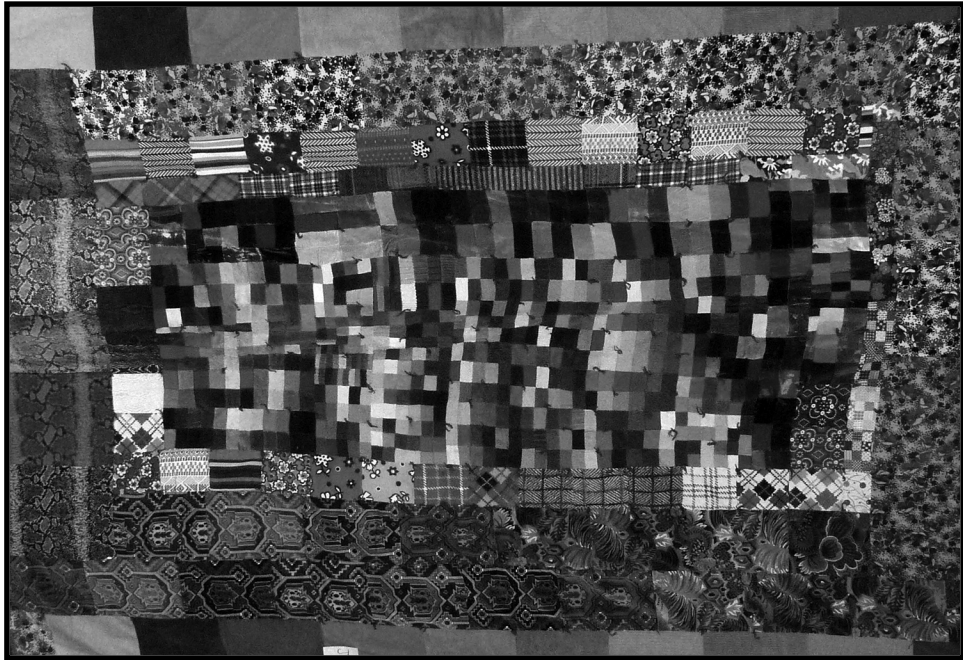


Quilts by sisters Violette Belle and Hazel Alice Yount



Sisters Violette Belle Yount (1902-1992), above left, and Hazel Alice Yount (1904-1991) were the last of the Yount family to engage in quilting. The items included in the family collection from them are, left, an unquilted needlework counterpane, Birds of Virginia, by Hazel Yount, circa 1930; and a Four Patch Triangle Combination Pattern quilt, done by them together about 1930.





Together the sisters created two quilts from corduroy and velveteen samples from the Waynesboro Crompton-Shenandoah Company. The top quilt, made about 1970, is a One Patch Pattern while the bottom one, made about 1940, is the Thousand Pyramids Pattern.



Book reviews

Editor's Note: The following section consists of reviews of recent books on regional and Virginia history as well as several that pertain to American history. Unless otherwise noted, these reviews are by AHB Book Review Editor and Associate Editor Daniel A. Métraux, Professor of Asian Studies at Mary Baldwin College. Please send any reviews or questions about reviews to the AHB's Book Review Editor, Daniel Métraux at dmetraux@mbc.edu or Department of Asian Studies, Mary Baldwin College, Staunton, VA 24401. The deadline for all reviews is October 1, 2015.

Local and Virginia history

Turk McCleskey, *The Road to Black Ned's Forge: A Story of Race, Sex and Trade on the Colonial American Frontier*. Charlottesville: University of Virginia Press, 2014. 324 pp.

Reviewed by J. Susanne Simmons

Anyone who has researched a modicum of colonial Augusta County history has heard the story. The year is 1753. Moravians, traveling through the county, stop at the forge of a free black man located on the Great Wagon Road south of Staunton; they note the man's Scottish wife, marvel at the couple's German fluency and enthuse that the two have read the sermons of Zinzendorf and heard Nyberg preach. The Moravians tell us so much and yet leave us wanting. The lament is universal: tell us their names, tell us more! Grieve no more. Turk McCleskey's newly published book *The Road to Black Ned's Forge: A Story of Race, Sex, and Trade on the Colonial American Frontier* is a stunning narrative that answers those question and so many others.

Twenty years ago I attended a conference at Emory and Henry College on the Virginia backcountry where I delivered a paper of modest scholarship on the African American presence in colonial Augusta County. My paper included the Moravian story and other information I had unearthed in courthouse records. Later at an impromptu gathering of conference participants, McCleskey generously shared the Edward Tarr (also called Black Ned) story, of how he found documents in Philadelphia, the documents that cracked the mystery of this frontier free black man, and of his plans for a book.

Little is known of the circumstances of Edward Tarr's birth except that he was born a slave around 1711. He first appears as "a man named Ned" in a 1739 runaway notice posted in the vicinity of Schuylkill Falls near Philadelphia. Ned's owner operated a mill near the home of Thomas Shute, who would purchase Ned in due course. The runaway notice describes a man who is strong and muscular, 27 years old and German-speaking—a linguistic skill not noted for any other slave in two decades of runaway notices.



He is not described as a mulatto in this notice or in any other extant record, which would indicate that there is no familial link with a white forbearer.

Somewhere along the way Ned learned ironwork. By the time of his sale to Thomas Shute in 1745, he had become a skilled blacksmith who was literate and numerate as well as bilingual. Shute's ownership of Ned had consequences for the slave's future. Shute, a Quaker, no doubt contributed to Ned's religious education. William Davis, Shute's son-in-law had deep business ties to the leadership in newly organized Augusta County. Shute's death in 1748 not only paved the way for Ned's freedom but disputes over his estate would later threaten that very freedom.

McCleskey's study gives significant attention to the Shute family. The reader can be forgiven some impatience, wanting to get to the Edward Tarr story, but would be wise to persevere and savor the Shute family's role in the narrative. It is here that the author examines colonial society and the economic role played by the yeoman. The reader discovers the close connection people and communities in the backcountry had with each other. McCleskey dispels the notion that people on the frontier led isolated existences, self- or geographically imposed. Indeed, they were aware of happenings up and down the frontier, knew of the activities and welfare of far flung neighbors and had deep economic interests and ties in eastern cities from Philadelphia to Charleston. McCleskey points out that the only road leading out of Charleston, South Carolina forked six miles from the town; one fork went west to Georgia and the other went to Staunton. Who knew?

Black Ned arrived in backcountry Augusta County in 1751 as Edward Tarr. He purchased 270 acres in the neighborhood of Timber Ridge thus becoming the first black landowner west of the Blue Ridge. (You can drive through Edward Tarr's landholding by driving south to Lexington, Virginia on Route 11. The place where Route 11 intersects I-81 is roughly in the center of Tarr's 270 acres.) His forge and skill as a blacksmith gave him an important economic place in his community and guaranteed his economic success in the ensuing years. His interracial marriage appears to have attracted little comment and garnered no disapproval among his neighbors.

Tarr became a subscribing member of Timber Ridge Presbyterian Church, pledging 10 shillings per year toward the new minister—the sum most frequently pledged by the majority of the congregation. The place on the subscribers' list where Tarr's name appears is laden with meaning and clues. McCleskey's remarkable ability to flesh out a document, to analyze it ten different ways (I admit to a bit of hyperbole but you should read his dissertation) inspires both admiration and envy in this erstwhile researcher.

It was Edward Tarr, freeholder, a man who had attained full membership in his community that the Moravians stumbled upon in fall of 1753 and wrote about in the now famous journal. Tarr was living the American dream long before anyone knew there would be a such thing. What looked



like a secure future, however, would not withstand the crushing troubles in store for the frontier beginning in 1755.

The outbreak of the French and Indian War and two other subsequent Indian conflicts created dire and unforeseen consequences for the backcountry. The war resulted in the loss of life and property, the disruption of business and financial investment, and in a growing social tension that altered the social fabric. Edward Tarr would be one the casualties. Concern over Indian attacks on Roanoke River settlements and communities in the New River Valley, and General Braddock's defeat near Fort Duquesne caused a significant portion of Augusta's population to abandon hearth, home and farm for the safety of someplace farther away. Edward Tarr abandoned his forge and returned to Pennsylvania in 1758. As the war shifted in favor of the English he returned to Augusta County less than a year later to a more hostile, less accepting community.

McCleskey suggests that those citizens who remained despite the danger had less patience for those neighbors who had fled. Whatever the reason, Edward Tarr found himself entangled in a series of legal problems, from disputes over his marriage to unpaid debts. A move to Staunton improved his prospects somewhat, until 1761 when a man named Hugh Montgomery claimed Edward Tarr was his property, his slave, purchased from Thomas Shute's son. The Augusta court found itself walking a fine line between Virginia's slave laws, frontier slave ownership, and Tarr's status as a freeholder.

Montgomery's claim and the resulting court case were fraught. Suspicion cast upon Edward Tarr brought scrutiny to the entire free black community. The decade of the 1760s witnessed an increase in slave labor in Augusta County at the same time Pontiac's Rebellion brought renewed depredations to the frontier. McCleskey describes the violent effect white frontier attitudes and behavior had on labor, indentured and enslaved. Entrenched White racism grew, linked mostly in overactive imaginations with Indian warfare. This did not bode well for Tarr and his fellow free black neighbors.

In the spirit of trying to convince you to read *The Road to Black Ned's Forge* and interest you in attending the Augusta County Historical Society's Spring Banquet on April 27, 2015, to hear Turk McCleskey, I will stop here. Just as I was twenty years ago, you too will be enthralled by Edward Tarr's story and Turk McCleskey's scholarship. If all politics is local then so too is all history. The case study of Edward Tarr, né Black Ned, freeholder, a free black man pursuing his happiness on the Virginia frontier is compelling, powerful, important, and worth your attention.

Lucia Stanton, "Those Who Labor for my Happiness:" Slavery at Thomas Jefferson's Monticello. Charlottesville and London: University of Virginia Press, 2012. 384 pp.

Reviewed by Ralph H. Ruedy

We are perhaps no longer shocked in 2014 by articles that "expose" Thomas Jefferson's alleged liaison with his slave Sally Hemings who was, allegedly, the half-sister of his deceased wife. Nor are we surprised when



we learn that the author of the Declaration of Independence himself owned other human beings, who labored for his happiness at Monticello, Paris, and Washington, D.C. For all these revelations about the Sphinx of Monticello, we owe a debt of gratitude to the ground-breaking work of Lucia “Cinder” Stanton, whose articles, published beginning in 1993, provide new insights to Jefferson, the man and the icon. Those original articles, along with two new ones, are gathered together here in a volume the *New York Times* has called “invaluable.”

And invaluable it is, not just for scholars and historians, but for anyone who has trod the sacred ground of Monticello, or stood under the Jefferson Memorial in Washington, D.C. and marveled at the words chiseled in the granite above, or has simply been swept away by the eloquence of the Declaration that Jefferson wrote in 1776. Regarding slavery, “How could he?” Stanton explains how he could and did, and how the slaves of Monticello themselves and their descendants have made incomparable contributions to the republic as we now conceive it.

Stanton’s collection is divided into three segments: “Jefferson and Slavery,” “Families in Slavery,” and “Families in Freedom.” As the titles of the last two segments suggest, the emphasis throughout is on “family.” Jefferson, Stanton makes clear, saw himself as the head of an extended family at Monticello, one that included white, black, and mulatto. She does not sugarcoat Jefferson’s actions or attitudes, but she portrays a much more nuanced picture than the one that we often see today, in our own century. What wise historian observed, “Those who are content to simply condemn the past doom themselves never to understand it”? Thanks to Staunton’s work, we begin to understand the mindset that could personify the spirit of the Enlightenment and at the same time countenance the ownership of other human beings. Particularly helpful to scholars are over fifty pages of notes which conclude the volume, and which provide plenty of “how I got here” and “where should some historian go from here” glosses on Stanton’s texts.

An added incentive to owning this volume is the enlightened and humane six-page introduction by Peter S. Onuf and Annette Gordon-Reed. The latter’s work has been particularly influential in familiarizing us with the “real” Jefferson, and Stanton pays tribute to her in her own “Author’s Note.” Stanton describes how Gordon-Reed “appeared out of the blue in 1995, fully in command of a part of Monticello’s history that I had been thinking about in a relative vacuum.” Happy for us, who have read and admire them both, that out-of-the-blue appearance!

Those ACHS members who heard Cinder Stanton speak at the April 2013 annual banquet will recall her modesty in claiming that she was not trained as a professional historian, but was simply lucky to land a job at Monticello over thirty years ago. We are all lucky that this intelligent, sensitive, humane lady has given us this collection of essays which add so much to our knowledge and admiration of one of our most beloved Founding Fathers.



The following reviews are by Daniel A. Métraux

Thomas Tabb Jeffries III, *Kenton Harper of Virginia: Editor, Citizen, Soldier*. Staunton, Va.: Augusta County Historical Society, 2013. 443p.

Kenton Harper (1801-1867) is one of the more interesting but forgotten heroes of American history. His life spanned the formative years both of Staunton as a city and the United States as a country. Harper was one of the most influential Virginians of his era. He was a leading activist for the Whig Party, an influential newspaper editor and writer, a high ranking military officer who served in both the Mexican War and the Civil War, and an important community leader.

Harper is the subject of a brilliant book, *Kenton Harper of Virginia: Editor, Citizen, Soldier* by Thomas Tabb Jeffries, III, a great-great-grandson of Harper. Jeffries, educated as a geoscientist, had a long career in oil and gas exploration with various ExxonMobil affiliates in such places as China, Indonesia and Singapore. He spent ten years researching and writing this book before joining with the Augusta County Historical Society to publish the work.

Harper was a Virginian by choice, not by birth. He grew up in the town of Chambersburg in Pennsylvania where his father, George Kenton Harper, was editor and publisher of the *Franklin County Repository* newspaper. His son worked for his father as a printer in his youth, but in 1823 he moved to Staunton where he worked for and later bought a local newspaper, the *Republican Farmer*. In due course he transformed that paper into the *Staunton Spectator* and *General Advertiser* which quickly became one of the leading newspapers in western Virginia. Harper owned and edited the paper, a direct ancestor of today's *Staunton Daily News Leader*, until he sold it in 1849.

Harper was a strong supporter of the Whig Party during the party's brief heyday from the late 1830s through the 1850s. Harper and his paper were major spokesmen for the Whigs on both the state and national levels. It is interesting to note that Staunton and Augusta County consistently voted for the Whigs, often by wide margins, but that the state as a whole more often supported the Democrats. Harper served one term as a state legislator in 1836 and later was mayor of Staunton for a while. Early in the Civil War he ran for a seat in the Confederate Congress in Richmond, but lost by a wide margin.

Harper, who was at various times in the local militia, became a leading military figure in Virginia during both the Mexican War and in the Civil War. As a Whig, Harper and his newspaper strongly opposed the war in Mexico as well as the seizure of Mexican territory, but when the government asked for help in the war he answered with enthusiasm. Harper responded to the call for volunteers by helping to organize a volunteer company from Augusta County. During the war Harper was appointed a captain in the 1st Virginia Infantry. He and his troops served in the northern frontier of Mexico



but saw very little real combat before he and his troops returned home to civilian life in August 1848. While in Mexico Harper briefly served as an occupying military governor of Parras in the Mexican state of Coahuila.

Although he was sixty years old at the outset of the Civil War, Harper played an active military role in support of Virginia and the Confederacy. As a major general in the Virginia state militia, he helped command a force of 2,400 men that seized the U.S. Army arsenal at Harper's Ferry. This attack was vital for the Confederates because they captured thousands of guns and, more importantly, all of the equipment needed to produce rifles. These materials were immediately shipped to Richmond and played a critical role in the Confederacy's ability to fight a major war. Soon thereafter he was appointed a brigadier general in the Virginia Provisional Army and when these forces were incorporated into the Confederate States Army, Harper was commissioned a colonel in command of the 5th Virginia Infantry. He and his men fought very well at the Battle of Bull Run in July 1861. Soon after the battle Harper learned that his wife was dying in Staunton. He resigned his commission and raced to Staunton to be with her, but he arrived too late. He stayed in Staunton throughout the rest of the war organizing a self-defense force that saw action in 1864 and 1865. Harper died in 1867.

Harper was a close friend of Alexander H. H. Stuart, a Staunton-based lawyer and politician who served as U.S. Secretary of the Interior between 1850-1853. At the behest of Stuart, Harper served as the U.S. government agent to the Chickasaws at Fort Washita in what is now Oklahoma from 1851-1852. After his return to Staunton Stuart appointed Harper to become First Clerk of the Pension Office in the Department of the Interior from 1852 until March 1853.

Author Jeffries has produced a very comprehensive in-depth study of Kenton Harper's life. Jeffries was helped immensely by the fact that Harper was a prolific letter writer and that many of these letters survive to this day. Because Harper was such an important figure in western Virginia, his story is also a history of Staunton and Augusta County for the middle decades of the nineteenth century. The author goes into exhaustive detail concerning Harper's involvement in the Mexican and Civil War – perhaps too great detail that would only really interest the most ardent of military historians. What is more interesting is Jeffries' descriptions of the hardships endured by American forces in Mexico and Harper's feelings about the Mexicans he encountered. One reason he opposed annexation of parts of Mexico was that the U.S. would then have to govern these people:

Surely such a country can never be made the fit abode of the Anglo-Saxon race....No- No-annexation an impossibility, an absurdity! Mexico is only suited to the kind of people who now inhabit it – a sort of primitive, pastoral, semi-barbarous race, averse to changing old habits and perfectly content to follow in the footsteps of their fathers a thousand years ago, whatever they may have been – Of course, I speak here of the masses—not the educated few who rule them. (148)



Another fascinating part of this book is the debate in Virginia in the late 1820s and early 1830s concerning the future of slavery in the state. One question was whether slaves should count as one person or a fraction of a person when allocating seats in the state legislature. Another was whether slavery should or could continue to survive as an institution. Although later in life Harper had a small handful of slaves working on his farm north of Staunton, he helped draft an 1829 western Virginia memorial to a state constitutional convention that asserted that one reason for Virginia's general decline was due to slavery. "While we believe that the public morals and general prosperity...are deplorably injured by slavery...it is our experience esteem slavery an evil greater than the aggregate of all other evils that beset us...." (24-25)

Jeffries must be congratulated for his excellent research and writing. The Augusta County Historical Society and Lot's Wife Publishing did a wonderful job supporting this very worthy project.

Nancy T. Sorrells on behalf of the Augusta County Historical Society, *Augusta County: Images of America*. Arcadia Publishing: Charleston, S.C., 2014. 128 pp.

Augusta County has a long and complex history. Established in 1738, its boundaries once stretched to the Mississippi River and the Great Lakes. Today it is Virginia's second largest county and ranks second in the state in agricultural production. It is home to the Valley Pike, the main artery leading settlers to the West. Daniel Boone, Thomas Jefferson, Andrew Jackson and Robert E. Lee dallied here, Woodrow Wilson was born here, and Presidents Franklin Roosevelt and Eisenhower, among others, came for visits. During the Civil War its agricultural bounty made it the "breadbasket of the Confederacy" and one of the main targets of Union armies throughout the conflict.

Several historians have compiled histories of Augusta County, but there is no comprehensive modern history of the region. The very complexity of local history would make the writing of such a volume a rather daunting task. Fortunately, Nancy T. Sorrells, an excellent local and regional historian, has compiled a superb volume of photographs on behalf of the Augusta County Historical Society. Sorrells introduces us to many facets of life in Augusta County in ten broadly based chapters that include such topics as Towns and Villages, Fields and Farms, Faces and Families, Schools and Churches, Roads, Rails and Planes, Mining and Manufacturing, and much more. An excellent introduction to the book as well as brief introductions to each chapter provide the reader with basic background information.

Some of the photographs depict amazing facets of Augusta's agricultural past. There is the photograph of Spotswood Lad, "a Poland China hog...that began life as a scrawny runt in the late 1920s, but eventually became the world's largest pig, according to *Ripley's Believe It or Not!* He weighed 1,495 pounds, stood four feet, two inches tall, and was nine feet



eight inches long. Fairgoers paid ten cents to view the prodigious hog..." (27) We are not told whether Spotswood Lad ever became bacon or ham sold on the open market. On the same page is a photo of Pocahontas, a Craigsville horse that became nationally famous for a copper-colored mark on her neck that truly resembles the stereotypical image of an Indian head.

Sorrells' book gives us an in-depth view of life in Augusta County from the mid-nineteenth century through the 1950s and 1960s. What strikes this reader is how much of the region's past is gone forever—the many railway stations, mills, general stores, and schools that once dominated western Virginia. This work does an excellent job in recapturing this now disappeared past. Interestingly, there is virtually no mention of the Civil War in this volume—it is a topic that is richly covered in so many other publications. Sorrells and the Augusta County Historical Society are to be congratulated for a first-class introduction to our history.

Alan Taylor, *The Internal Enemy: Slavery and War in Virginia 1772-1832*. New York and London: W.W. Norton & Co., 2013. 605 pp.

Historian Alan Taylor, Thomas Jefferson Professor of History at the University of Virginia, won the 2014 Pulitzer Prize for history for his 2013 book, *The Internal Enemy: Slavery and War in Virginia 1772-1832*. Taylor deserves this award for a very well researched and very clearly written study of white-slave relations in Virginia in the early nineteenth century Virginia. The focus of the book is how white Virginians both valued the institution of slavery while living in fear of a major slave rebellion. Their fear was greatly enhanced during the War of 1812 when for three years (1812-1814) British naval vessels constantly raided Virginia's coastal areas destroying property and livestock with virtual impunity while encouraging slaves to flee to their ships with promises of freedom and a respectable job in the British military. Around 3,000 slaves responded to this clarion call and as promised found freedom and respect in the hands of the British.

When British warships appeared off the coast of Virginia and in the Chesapeake, their goal was to punish the Americans for declaring war on them while they were battling for their survival against the forces of Napoleonic France. Over the next two years several thousand slaves, often whole families, eluded white patrols and paddled out to the British warships in the darkness of night. As guides, pilots, sailors and marines, the now liberated Blacks used their intimate knowledge of the countryside to guide the British during their raids along the coast, thus enabling the British to escalate their attacks and eventually burn down much of Washington DC including the capitol and the White House. There was a less successful British attack on Baltimore in 1814.

I was startled to read (310) that Francis Scott Key's poem, our national anthem, based on this attempted invasion of Maryland, contains a passage that is blatantly racist. Today we only sing the first verse, neglecting the third verse which includes a direct criticism of the British practice



of liberating American slaves: "No refuge could save the hireling and slave, From the terror of flight or the gloom of the grave, and the star-spangled banner—O! Long may it wave, O'er the land of the free and the home of the brave."

Alan Taylor's point, his main theme, is the way in which white Americans, particularly those in the South, equated their own freedom with the enslavement of Blacks. These slaves, so recently liberated by the British, says Key, can go to the hell of their own graves so that white America could remain the "land of the free."

The War of 1812 conjured up the deepest fears of Virginia slaveholders who more than ever imagined their slaves as "an internal enemy." These Virginians also felt more alienated from the federal government which utterly failed to defend them. Instead, Taylor notes, they "turned south, their interests aligning more and more with their section" of the country.

Taylor speculates how some of the egalitarian ideals of the American Revolution actually brought about greater attachment to slavery in Virginia. For example, a post-Revolutionary law abolished the old aristocratic practice of having the eldest son inherit the whole estate and further entailing plantations so that they could never be sold outside the family line. The consequence was that many of the old wealthy aristocratic families went into deep decline with the breakup of estates. The resulting broad dispersal of slave ownership spread to a broader spectrum of whites, thus further entrenching slavery. Taylor also notes that the Revolution taught whites not to trust their slaves because they took seriously Jefferson's demands for equality and freedom. This yearning, Taylor notes, was bound to further frighten whites into fearing slave revolts.

The whites believed that slavery was necessary for the economic prosperity of Virginia while living in constant fear of slave uprisings. Taylor writes:

During the early nineteenth century, Virginians thought of blacks in two radically different ways. On the one hand, masters often felt secure with, and even protective of, particular slaves well known to them. But when thinking of all slaves collectively, the Virginians imagined a dreaded "internal enemy" who might at any moment rebel in a midnight massacre to butcher white men, women, and children in their beds. Virginians dwelled on lurid reports of massacres associated with the massive slave revolt in Saint-Dominique, a French West Indian colony that became the Republic of Haiti in 1804....Prior to the War of 1812, Virginians frankly acknowledged that their exploitation and domination had bred an internal enemy who longed for freedom (7).

Late in life Thomas Jefferson, now long retired from public service,



made the following observation about the growing tension growing in Virginia between masters and slaves and white Virginians and the federal government: “Like a firebell in the night [it] awakened and filled me with terror. I considered it at once the knell of the union.” The sense of national purpose engendered by the American Revolution was starting to dissipate. The war of 1812 led to many thoughts of disunion, both in the North and the South, a turn away from the national government in Virginia and elsewhere in the South, a growing divide on questions of race and slavery, and a decline in the economic well-being of Virginia.

When we read Taylor’s current masterpiece, we gain a vivid picture of Virginia and the state of the Union four decades before the start of the Civil War. Nobody at the time could have predicted the coming of actual war, but Taylor’s work shows us the growing divide.

Mary E. Lyons, *The Blue Ridge Tunnel: A Remarkable Engineering Feat in Antebellum Virginia*. Charleston, S.C.: The History Press, 2014

Drivers crossing the Blue Ridge Mountains at Afton are probably unaware of the fact that beneath them lies one of the great historical treasures of Virginia. The Blue Ridge Tunnel, built by engineer Claudius Crozet from 1850 through 1860, was the westernmost and by far the longest of four railway tunnels constructed by Crozet to cross the Blue Ridge Mountains at Rockfish Gap. At 4,237 feet it was probably the longest mountain tunnel in the world at the time of its completion just before the start of the Civil War.

The 1840s and 1850s was a time of great railway expansion in the United States. The earliest period of railway construction was up and down the East coast connecting cities like Baltimore and Washington or New York and Philadelphia. But, as historian Mary E. Lyons points out in her new book, *The Blue Ridge Tunnel: A Remarkable Engineering Feat in Antebellum Virginia*, by the late 1840s many railway companies were struggling to find ways to connect the East coast with the Midwest. The key was to reach the Ohio River which would then lead to the Mississippi. The Erie Canal had opened up commerce to the upper Midwest, but faster rail service would bring more profits and far cheaper rates for transporting goods.

The Appalachian Mountains were historically an immense barrier between eastern states and the Midwest. Railway companies from New York to Georgia began a race to see who could make the first connection between the two regions. Crozet persuaded the Virginia legislature to give the go-ahead for the construction of a series of tunnels that would connect eastern and central Virginia with Staunton.

Fortunately for Crozet, an influx of two million Irish fleeing the potato famine in their homeland provided a ready supply of labor. The Irish were willing to work hard at low wages and, as Lyons points out, many of the Irish were experienced miners whose skills were badly needed while constructing the tunnel. There were also a good number of enslaved work-



ers who were leased to Crozet by nearby landowning families. The construction work was hard, dangerous and often very deadly. There were outbreaks of cholera and other diseases, frequent accidents and explosions around the construction sites. The tunnel was built before the advent of dynamite meaning that it had to be drilled and blasted with black powder entirely by hand. Lyons lists the deaths of 189 people who died constructing the great tunnel.

The tunnel was the main rail artery connecting eastern and western Virginia for almost a century. It was replaced in 1944 by a larger tunnel needed to transport material for World War II. The old tunnel was abandoned, but may be opened in the future as a historic tourist attraction for the area.

Lyons notes that the tunnel brought many surprising benefits. "Take oysters, for instance. Americans adored the fleshy meat inside this mollusk's shell. Oyster saloons, oyster bars, and oyster parlors served them raw, boiled, stewed, broiled or fried. The largest oyster beds in the world were off the coast of Virginia, but oysters spoil quickly. Trains would be the fastest way to deliver the delicacy to drooling customers west of the Blue Ridge Mountains." (21)

Lyons' book is very well-written and researched, a very pleasant read. The very factual text is accompanied by a great many period illustrations and photographs. What makes the book really interesting, however, is the author's close attention to several Irish workers and their families. We learn of their hardships, deep Catholic faith, and their occasional willingness to strike for higher wages. This book comes very highly recommended to any student of this region's local history.

Richard A. Straw, *Rockbridge County: The Michael Miley Collection (Images of America)*. Charleston, S.C.: Arcadia Publishing, 2014. 127 pp.

Rockbridge County is a region of great natural beauty and historical significance. Located in the central region of the Valley of Virginia, it boasts magnificent views of towering mountains and rolling farm land. The county has also played a vital role in the history of both Virginia and the South. It is the site of Lexington, one of the most picturesque small cities in the United States, and two distinguished universities, Washington & Lee and Virginia Military Institute.

Michael Miley (1841-1918) was a remarkable photographer who operated a studio in Lexington from the late 1860s until his death. Born in Rockingham County, Miley fought in the Civil War and returned to the Valley after the war. He studied photography with John Burdette in Staunton before settling in Lexington and opening his studio. He then spent the remaining five decades of his life building a photo collection that grew to over 7,000 pictures, many of which are now archived at Washington & Lee.

Miley took thousands of pictures in his studio but also traveled exten-



sively throughout the region capturing views of the countryside, of farmers and merchants plying their trades, of Washington & Lee and VMI students playing baseball and football, and much more. Miley took some remarkable pictures of an aging but still handsome and distinguished Robert E. Lee when he served as president of then Washington College (now Washington & Lee) as well as portraits of other famous persons such as Matthew Fontaine Maury, Civil War governor John Letcher, and General Jubal Early.

Richard A. Straw, a historian at Radford University, has produced a remarkable book that showcases the brilliant artistry of Miley. He organizes Miley's photographs into five sections: Environmental Portraits, Studio Photography, W&L and VMI, In the Country, and In the Town. What makes Miley's photography outstanding is the fact that he is so able to capture the moods of his human subjects. We see the exasperated looks of young girls as they roll their eyes as yet another photograph is taken, a proud retired General Lee on his horse Traveler in his garden in Lexington, a contented cow grazing on the lawn at VMI and much more. The "Environmental Portraits" capture children at play, farmers at work and much more.

Straw provides us with a brilliant gateway into late nineteenth-century life in Rockbridge County through the photography of Michael Miley. The pictures are greatly enhanced by lengthy and very informative captions alongside each photo. All in all, this is a fine work of history that belongs in the library of anybody interested in Virginia history.

Richard G. Williams, Jr., *The Battle of Waynesboro. Charleston, S.C.: The History Press (Civil War Sesquicentennial Series), 2014. 192 pp.*

As Civil War battles go, the Battle of Waynesboro fought in Augusta County on 2 March 1865 was a minor skirmish when compared to what happened at places like Gettysburg or Antietam. But it is important because it was the final battle for Lt. General Jubal Early and his ragtag army in the Shenandoah Valley and presaged the collapse of the Confederacy a month later at Appomattox. Major General Philip Sheridan had brought his Union army down the Valley from Winchester on a campaign that featured the destruction of farms, agricultural products and any other goods that might aid the Confederate war effort. General Early and a strong contingent of Confederate forces had tried to stop Sheridan's advance into the Valley at the Battle of Cedar Creek in October 1864. Following his defeat Early retreated down the Valley with the remnants of his army to Augusta County where they set up winter headquarters. Early's army was further depleted when Lee transferred some of his troops to his own army defending Richmond. By the time Sheridan arrived in Augusta County, Early could only counter him with a small force of tired, weak and hungry men. Early's forces dug in near and in Waynesboro, but were soon routed by Sheridan and his subordinate, brigadier general George Armstrong Custer.



Early eluded capture, but his small army was destroyed and the Confederacy's hold on the Valley was over.

Waynesboro-based Civil War historian Richard G. Williams, who grew up very close to the site of the battle, has written a lengthy and comprehensive analysis of the battle. The focus of the book is on the battle itself, but he adds a lengthy description of the events leading up to the battle including useful sections on the lives of Union and Confederate troops including Generals Early and Sheridan. There is an interesting sub-chapter on the merits of Sheridan's "burning" of the Valley from Winchester to Augusta County where Williams reminds readers that Sheridan was acting on direct orders from General U. S. Grant and acted with restraint on some occasions, but he also tells of instances of unnecessary cruelty by Union troops in the Valley. There is a lengthy section on the "Aftermath" of the battle as well as an Appendix section on one Maria Lewis, a Black woman who allegedly rode in disguise with the 8th New York Cavalry during the Civil War.

Williams' *The Battle of Waynesboro* is a superb study not only of the battle itself, but also of events preceding and following the battle, the leading actors on both sides, and the desperate condition of the Confederacy in the late winter of 1865. His approach is balanced and fair except that he may go overboard a bit in his criticism of Sheridan's "burning" campaign. Williams has done excellent research even using the memoirs of both Generals Early and Sheridan and his very clear writing is a joy to follow. The book is very well illustrated. Williams is to be commended for his excellent work.

Charles Culbertson, *Staunton, Virginia: A Treasury of Historic Tales*. Published by the Author in Staunton, Va., 2013. 231 pp.

Charles Culbertson *The Staunton, Virginia Anthology*. Staunton, Va.: Clarion Publishing, 2013. 248 pp.

Charles Culbertson is an acclaimed writer who focuses on the history of Staunton, Augusta County and the Shenandoah Valley region. His historical vignettes appear each Saturday in the *Staunton Daily News Leader*. Culbertson is a gifted and highly entertaining writer with a deep understanding of local history. He is the author of several widely read books that feature generally short essays on important incidents and influential and/or interesting personalities who have influenced this region.

Culbertson published two books on local history in 2013, *Staunton, Virginia: A Treasury of Historic Tales* and *The Staunton Virginia Anthology*. The Anthology consists of eighty-seven short essays covering Staunton history from its founding in the mid-1700s to the post-World War II era. The Historic Tales book has thirty-five longer essays covering the Staunton-Augusta region from early times through the 1970s and 1980s.

Culbertson recognizes the need for a comprehensive and scholarly history of the Staunton-Augusta region, but suggests that such a work would require many years of hard work and research and would interest only a handful of readers. He covers the area's history quite well, but



wants the reader to learn local history by reading his many short essays. The assumption is that by reading a whole set of these essays, the reader will form his own view of local history and the relationship between this region and the state and world around it.

Culbertson appears to have a special interest in the Civil War. He notes in the preface of his *Historic Tales* that nearly half the chapters deal directly or indirectly with the Civil War. He does this because much of the promotional material on Staunton ignores the city's involvement in the war despite the fact that Staunton played a critical role in the defense of the Confederacy. True to his word, both books contain a significant number of essays not only on the war itself, but also its aftermath.

The *Historic Tales* volume is the more valuable of the two in helping the reader get a picture of Staunton history. Besides lengthy discussions of the Civil War in Staunton, there are fascinating essays on such topics as a view of downtown Staunton a century ago, the founding of Gypsy Hill Park, visits by Senator Stephen A. Douglas in 1860 and President Eisenhower in 1960, the huge influence of the Statler Brothers, the brief stop by Buffalo Bill and his road show just before his January 1917 death, the preaching of Billy Sunday and much more. Unfortunately, Culbertson refuses to put his chapters in chronological order which can lead to confusion. There is a useful index.

The essays in the *Anthology* are written in chronological order, but there is no index, a major omission. The essays are short, but very entertaining, very informative, and well researched. Both volumes are richly endowed with many old pictures and photographs, many of which have never been published before. It's a good fast read.

I detected one contradictory error in Culbertson's writing. In the *Historic Tales* he says that Eisenhower was the fifth U.S. President to come to Staunton. The others listed are Grant (1874), Woodrow Wilson (1912), Coolidge (1928) and FDR (1941). And yet in his *Anthology* there is a brief essay on the 1855 visit of Franklin Pierce in 1855—and if memory serves me right, President Jackson often traveled through Staunton on his way to and from Nashville-Washington, D.C.

Culbertson's books on Staunton make for fine reading or the general public and are excellent introductions for the newcomer or visitor to the region.

Rex Bowman and Carlos Santos, *Rot, Riot and Rebellion: Mr. Jefferson's Struggle to Save the University That Changed America*. Charlottesville: University of Virginia Press, 2013. 182 pp.

When Thomas Jefferson wrote the inscription for his tomb stone, he cited what he considered his greatest achievements: his role in writing the Declaration of Independence, the Statute of Virginia for religious freedom and the creation of the University of Virginia. He envisioned a new and open university that would be radically different from the other colleges in Virginia and elsewhere in the just born United States.



Veteran Virginia-based news reporters Rex Bowman and Carlos Santos have done a very able job chronicling the difficult and tumultuous early years of the university. Their book, *Rot, Riot and Rebellion: Mr. Jefferson's Struggle to Save the University That Changed America*, is a very well written and researched history of the start-up years of U.Va.

Jefferson as an educator cherished the ideal of intellectual freedom, but he also wanted a school that would teach practical subjects that would assist the student in daily life. Perhaps his greatest innovation was his insistence that U.Va. become a secular school free of any religious attachment. There would be no chapel on campus and no affiliation with any church or denomination. This was a sharp move away from most other American colleges which were closely affiliated with a certain denomination.

Jefferson's U.Va. had no president because such an office appeared to hamper a free democratic environment. Jefferson wanted close interaction between faculty and students and for the students to have the opportunity to choose their own courses at a time when other colleges imposed a regimen of Latin, Greek and math. U.Va. offered a broader curriculum of sciences, modern languages and political economy. U.Va. offered no degrees per se. Students could stay as long as they paid the tuition. And Jefferson, forever the great democrat, wanted his students to govern themselves.

Jefferson's ideals were well placed, but as a state school the university had to receive state recognition and funding from the State Legislature. The idea of a secular university drew strong criticism from church leaders and more traditional legislators, but despite this opposition, Jefferson's and university allies in the Legislature always carried the day.

The greatest threat to the university's survival during its inaugural decades came from the students themselves. Although a few students took a genuine interest in their studies, many of the students were spoiled sons of Virginian aristocrats. Like so many fraternity boys today, they came to party. They drank to utter abandon, brought prostitutes to their rooms, and flagrantly disobeyed virtually every university regulation. They often staged riots, attacked professors who attempted to assert their authority, and caused physical harm to campus buildings and the homes of certain professors. Some professors had to arm themselves with guns and pistols for their own protection, but several were whipped and beaten up and one professor was even murdered by a student.

Initially the university was quite small with seven or eight professors and less than two hundred students, virtually all of them from the South. By the late 1840s the university began to grow and the turmoil involving the students began to calm down. It took two or three decades for Jefferson's dream of a great secular center of learning to evolve, but by the end of the nineteenth century the man from Monticello would have been satisfied with his grand experiment.



Richard G. Williams, Jr., *Lexington, Virginia and the Civil War*. Charleston, S.C.: The History Press, 2013.

The historic legacy of Lexington Virginia is securely tied to the Civil War. It is the home of two of the South's most famous Civil War era colleges, Virginia Military Institute and Washington & Lee University. Two of the Confederacy's most famous generals, Robert E. Lee and Stonewall Jackson, are buried there. And both generals were intimately involved with the city while alive, Jackson as a pre-war professor at VMI and Lee as the postwar president of what was then Washington College. Some people regard Lee Chapel at W&L to be a shrine to the memory of the failed Confederacy.

Richard G. Williams, who has written extensively about the Civil War in the Shenandoah Valley, has prepared an excellent study of life in Lexington before, during and immediately after the war. He begins his narrative with a brief sketch of Lexington's history from its founding in the mid-eighteenth century through the 1850s including the growth of the city's two colleges. There follows a very lengthy study of the debate between Lexington residents whether Virginia should secede or remain in the Union. Williams then jumps ahead to 1864 to analyze the effects of Union general David Hunter's devastating raid on Lexington in June, 1864 as well as the collapse of the Confederacy ten months later. The author's final chapters focus on African Americans in Lexington during and after the war and the key role that General Lee's presidency had in the rapid revival of both Washington College and of Lexington itself.

Williams is at his best in his analysis of the secession debates of 1860 and 1861. He identifies most residents as being "conditional unionists," people who had great devotion to the Union, the legacy of the American Revolution, but who also had very strong ties to their city and to Virginia. They felt that the growing crisis had been caused by two sets of troublemakers, abolitionists in the North and secessionist hot-heads in South Carolina. As long as there was peace and the Union held together, their way of life which included slavery was secure. Many in Lexington agreed with the *Lexington Gazette* when soon after Lincoln's election it maintained:

Now that he [Lincoln] has been elected, what can he do? The Conservative party have a majority in both houses of Congress. The Supreme Court is Conservative. The Executive can enforce no law prejudicial to the institution of slavery, if Congress enacts none. Every act he does is done under the solemn oath which he takes at his inauguration. Had we not then better try him. It may be that he will prove to be a conscientious and law-abiding man... We have not had an ultra pro-slavery president, unless Mr. Tyler may be called so, and yet all the time the institution of slavery had been safe from executive interference. (37)

Staunton lawyer Alexander H. H. Stuart reasoned: "The present alienation is the work of designing men. I believe that all our wrongs can be effectively redressed in the Union. Secession, instead of being a remedy,



would be an aggravation. It would lead to emancipation, and probably to emancipation in blood.”(39) Another Lexington resident stated that the leaders of the Confederacy “were a set of traitors.”

Many of the students at VMI and Washington College, however, were from other parts of Virginia and the South. Many students on both campuses had strong anti-Union sentiments and wanted Virginia to stand with her kindred states in the Deep South that had seceded in late 1860 and very early 1861. Students held frequent “flag-raising ceremonies” where they hoisted the Confederate flag and demonstrated in favor of secession. Anti-Union sentiment was so strong at Washington College that its long-time president, the Reverend George Junkin, a native of Pennsylvania, soon resigned his post and hastily returned to his place of origin. Williams notes:

[T]he majority of Lexington residents held strong Unionist sympathies due to the fact that many of them had...strong ties to Pennsylvania. This was not the case with most of the VMI cadets; many of them called the Tidewater area of Virginia home...[They], like their compatriots at neighboring Washington College, viewed the gathering storm more as an opportunity for glory than as a serious danger to peace and national unity. (70)

Pro-Union sentiment quickly evaporated in April, 1861 after the shelling of Fort Sumter and Lincoln’s call for 75,000 volunteers to put down the rebellion. Secession of many southern states had swung congressional majorities to the North and a Union army marching to South Carolina would have to invade Virginia. Suddenly most residents of Lexington, like most other Virginians in the Valley and east of the Blue Ridge, felt more secure joining their kindred southerners.

Williams concludes his chapters on the union-disunion debate discussing the case of John Brown. A VMI contingent was sent to the site of the hanging in Charles Town to keep order. Major John Thomas Lewis Preston wrote a very lengthy and detailed account of the hanging which is quoted in full here.

Williams’ discussion of the Union raid of June 1864 details the burning of four structures at VMI and other buildings and structures like bridges in Lexington and the surrounding area. General Hunter also wanted Washington College burned, but his officers resisted and prevailed.

Williams writes:

As the last remnants of Hunter’s army left town, and as the smoke rose from the ashes, many of Lexington’s citizens began to pick up the pieces of what remained of their lives. The smell of charred buildings was thick in the summer air. Many were in shock....VMI lay in ruins. Washington College had been ransacked and vandalized, food stores had been depleted, family heirlooms stolen, homes shelled and



burned, livestock stolen or slaughtered, fortunes ruined, and honor humiliated. A dark pall hung over the "Athens of the South." Yet a spark remained in the townspeople of Lexington. They would rebuild, and they would remember. (100-101)

The raid was followed by a period of looting, vandalism and a breakdown of law and order. Every window at Washington College was broken and the libraries at both colleges as well as all equipment in the buildings were totally destroyed. Order was not restored until after the end of the war and the occupation of Union troops. They and local business and education leaders worked hard to open the schools, get the railway working, and local commerce underway. Nevertheless, it took quite a few years for Lexington to regain its prewar prosperity.

Williams concludes his book with a chapter on African-Americans in Lexington. There were quite a few freemen in the town before the war including several who gained some degree of local respectability as local tradesmen. Others, though technically still slaves, stayed loyal servants to their masters during the war. At least one served as a valet to Stonewall Jackson until his death and another saved priceless VMI records and documents that he buried under a dead horse when he heard Union troops were approaching. When Union troops asked about the freshly dug earth, Robert "Old Bob" Price dug up the smelly equine carcass that convinced the troops to quickly leave. A short final chapter introduces the reader to Lee's tenure as president of Washington College.

Lexington, Virginia and the Civil War is an interesting, pleasant and easy read. The book is well written, packed with detailed information about the impact of the war on the people of Lexington. The discussion of the union-disunion debate and the reaction of local college students, which includes a short but excellent entry by local historian Robert H. Moore II, is especially interesting and is the highlight of this useful work. The bibliography is most impressive. I heartily recommend this book to any general reader or scholar with an interest of the Civil War in western Virginia.

Lynn Coffey, *Appalachian Heart: Oral Histories of the Mountain Elders*. Charlottesville: Quartet Books, 2013

When I came to Staunton from Boston over three decades ago, I came from a very modern city to a Virginia town that is well connected to the most modern elements of American society. Super highways allow me to travel to Charlottesville in less than an hour and to Washington DC in less than three hours. Television and the internet connect me to the whole world and my job in teaching Asian Studies has taken me to Asia almost every year since I started teaching at Mary Baldwin College. Leading such a cosmopolitan life has created a situation where I know very little about the



heritage and culture of the people whose families have lived in the area for many generations.

We are fortunate that writers like Lynn Coffey have taken the time to chronicle the lives of the mountain people who in so many ways have maintained traditional Appalachian culture. Coffey writes that when she moved to the tiny mountain hamlet of Love, Virginia in 1980, she quickly realized that traditional Appalachian culture was ebbing away and that she had better preserve the memory of this old and rich way of life by interviewing as many of her friends and neighbors as possible. She started a monthly newspaper, *Backroads*, and began recording oral histories and taking pictures of her elderly neighbors. She published her paper from 1981 to 2006 and then moved on to an even bolder venture—publishing many of the articles from her paper in a series of books. Her first three books were *Plain Folk and Simple Livin'*, *The Road to Chicken Holler*, and *Faces of Appalachia*. Her latest book, *Appalachian Heart*, consists of more recent interviews with her nineteen friends and neighbors. When a local reporter asked her in September 2013 what this and her other books are about, she replied, “They are about the Appalachian culture, or the mountain people from this area, a lot of whom are from Nelson County or have roots in Nelson County,”

One of my favorite people in this volume is Lila Lee Wilson Campbell, who is introduced early in the book. She is an old friend of the author and has lived a rich life in the Blue Ridge Mountains. Her father was a coal miner from West Virginia who moved to Augusta County seeking a better way of life and married a local girl. Both were deaf mutes, but worked hard and led productive lives. Lila, born in 1930, grew up during the Depression. Her family lived with relatives in Tyro who owned and operated a large apple orchard. Her fondest childhood memories included accompanying her family to Lynchburg to sell fruit, butter and eggs at the farmer’s market.

Lila married Harold Campbell, a local worker who joined the Navy in 1945. They married in March 1945. They moved to Florida where he was stationed and returned to Tyro in 1947. Harold worked again at the orchard and later drove a taxi in Lynchburg. They raised several children and stayed close with their friends and family.

The most memorable event in their lives occurred on August 19, 1969, when Hurricane Camille ripped through their community in Nelson County. Lila recalled Harold rushing her and their family into their car and driving to higher ground. “The lightning was continuous, and the thunder so loud you had to holler loud just to be heard inside the car. When daylight came, we could see where the river had come across the road and into the basement of our house.” A huge landslide barely missed their car. Neighboring houses and business were washed away, but their house, though damaged, survived. Harold died in 1997.

Coffey asked Lila what she thought was the biggest change had been in society during her life. Without hesitation, she replied, “Discipline! Everything is moving too fast with technology and parents working. They are so



busy, they don't take the time to discipline their children anymore. Also, people don't visit and associate with each other anymore."

When asked the same question, another friend, Lowell Humphreys, said that everything now is different. "You didn't go to the store to buy hardly nothing; now you can eat steak every night if you got the money. We didn't know what eating out was. You had your milk and your hog meat. Times are better, Lynn, in a way, but the people don't have the love for each other like they did when we grew up. You worked together....Now we have big Cadillac cars that can go one hundred miles an hour in just a few minutes, and we don't take time or won't take time to go and say hi to a neighbor....We're going to have to start working together again."

Appalachian Heart is a fun and easy read. The interview essays are well written and well organized. The reader will come away with a fine overview of local Appalachian culture before it vanishes into the mists of time and future generations will appreciate the opportunity to encounter a way of life that no longer exists. Lynn Coffey is a fine oral historian and we should all be grateful for her fine ethnographic work.

A. Scott Berg, *Wilson*. New York: Putnam, 2013.

For the past thirty-two years I have made frequent reference to the presidency of Woodrow Wilson in my classes at Mary Baldwin College and have taken countless numbers of groups of international students to visit his exquisite birthplace directly across the street from our college. Wandering through Wilson's birthplace and the nearby museum dedicated to his life can give one some impression of his life and personality, but here one barely scratches the surface.

Wilson was one of the most complex political leaders ever to emerge onto the American scene. He was a gifted public intellectual who was both a loner and a folksy populist who could be both introspective and inspirational. Trained as an academic historian, he devoted much of his early life to teaching history at the university level which brought him eventually to the hallowed halls of Princeton. An odd twist of fate led Dr. Wilson to the presidency of Princeton where his progressive ideas for the modernization and expansion of the university clashed with more established traditional interests. Wilson's frustrations as a university president led to his resignation and sudden transformation into a national politician.

New Jersey political boss James Smith was initially skeptical of Wilson's chances for success amidst the stench of corruption that pervaded that state's politics at the turn of the last century. Smith called Wilson "that Presbyterian priest" because of his inexperience and high moral principles, but it was these very traits that other state politicians thought perhaps appealing to the state's electorate. They felt that they could control him, but they were not prepared for his strong independent spirit after his election. His independence, success as governor and eventual support from Democratic Party stalwart William Jennings Bryan allowed him to emerge as a serious



candidate for President in 1912. A split in the Republican Party allowed Wilson to walk into the White House almost unimpeded in 1913.

Andrew Scott Berg has produced one of the most comprehensive studies of Wilson's life. Berg, a Pulitzer Prize winning biographer of Lindbergh, believes that it is Wilson who laid the foundation for the modern presidency in the twentieth century. He stresses that it was Wilson's program, New Freedom, that lay the progressive base on which the New Deal, the Fair Deal, the New Frontier, and the Great Society were built. Berg portrays Wilson as an effective crusader for progressive values and for pushing the highest ideals of his country even if these ideals could find no place in the muddled world of early twentieth-century imperial politics. Berg also stresses Wilson's key role in moving the country from isolationism to interventionism to inter-nationalism.

Berg laments that Wilson's fall was even more rapid than his rise. When Wilson failed to persuade the victors at Versailles to accept all of his Fourteen Points, he latched on to the idea of the League of Nations as the venue to secure peace in the future. The success of the League depended on the ideal of collective security which found few supporters in the Senate. Senators offered some compromises, but Wilson's all-or-nothing approach and his attempt to in public opinion contributed to stroke that made him a virtual invalid for the rest of his presidency and life.

Berg gives us a very comprehensive picture of the life and presidency of Woodrow Wilson. There is an especially good analysis of the reasons for Wilson's swift rise in politics and his even more rapid collapse. Wilson is like a shooting star that seemingly came from nowhere, briefly lit up the sky, and then dissipated quickly into dust. The research and writing here are excellent, but Berg at times becomes too enamored with his subject to the extent that he places Wilson on too high a pedestal.

Rodney Barfield, *America's Forgotten Caste: Free Blacks in Antebellum Virginia and North Carolina*. Bloomington, Indiana: Xlibris Corp., 2013. 223 pp.

The system of slavery in the South before the Civil War was very complex. Massive numbers of African-Americans suffered lives in bondage, the physical property of their white masters. There was also a substantial number of free African-Americans throughout the South, people who could develop their own lives, but who were not regarded as citizens and led very restricted lives. Their stories form a nearly forgotten aspect of early American history.

Thomas Day, born in 1801, lived in Milton, North Carolina, a small village in Caswell County on the banks of the Dan River near Danville, Virginia. A free Black, he moved from Southside Virginia to start a new business with his brother. He was a master carpenter at a time when this was one of the most respected trades. Day owned property on the main street of the town, a house of his own, a shop for his furniture making and



a farm outside the town. He had good relations with plantation owners and businessmen in both Virginia and North Carolina.

Thomas Day wanted to marry a free Black woman, Aquilla Wilson, who lived in Virginia. However, she could not freely enter North Carolina. The problem was that both Day and Wilson as nonwhites faced severe restrictions on their liberty and mobility. It was illegal for Blacks, free or not free, to enter another state. It took a special act of the North Carolina legislature to allow Wilson to travel from Virginia to North Carolina to marry Thomas Day.

Historian Rodney Barfield writes that by the 1850s

The free Negro caste was the most despised and reviled element of the American population – albeit the fastest-growing section. Racism had so imbued itself in the American character that free blacks were completely outside the social contract, with a few exceptions of protected individuals. Their status and station in life were completely under the authority of a white ruling class that feared and resented their potential for equal civil rights and social privileges....[W]hite political leaders restricted [their] mobility, voting, teaching, and eventually even preaching. (13)

Despite these harsh restrictions, Barfield in his book *America's Forgotten Caste* that many free Blacks were still able to do well in life, becoming teachers, preachers, missionaries, contractors, carpenters, farmers and even wealthy entrepreneurs. They constituted nearly a half million people by 1860 or just about two percent of the nation's population.

Barfield uses the Day family as a case study of a free Black family that was able to prosper in antebellum Virginia and North Carolina. They worked as cabinetmakers, farmers, and entrepreneurs and intermarried with other free Black families in the region. They attended school, some in the North, and one brother became an ordained minister, missionary, teacher, and a court justice in Liberia.

Barfield clearly demonstrates that independent and self-sustaining nonwhites contradicted the basic myths that supported the institution of slavery. The Day family showed that Blacks were intelligent, hardworking, and able to do as well as whites if given the opportunity. Their success belied all arguments in favor of racism and slavery. Their growing numbers and success brought panic across the South and in the years just before the Civil War insured the passage of legislation in many southern states to further restrict their freedom. Free blacks in Arkansas, for example, were evicted from their land and money from the sale of their property was designated to an education fund for white children.

America's Forgotten Caste is a carefully researched and well written chapter of the history of American race relations – a story that deeply un-



dermines the stereotypical racial divide between free whites and Black slaves. A very deep bibliography includes many useful primary sources. The writing is clear throughout and the story is well developed. It is a complex story of American history well introduced here.

John R. Hildebrand, *A Mennonite Journal 1862-1865: A Father's Account of the Civil War in the Shenandoah Valley*. Staunton, Va.: Lot's Wife Publishing, 2013. 103 pp. Second edition

There have been tens of thousands of books and articles written about the American Civil War. Many of these works concern military action, often accounts of certain battles or campaigns, or the actions of political leaders such as Presidents Lincoln and Davis. Of equal value are accounts of ordinary citizens, how they experienced the war either at home or at the front. We know a lot about life in the Valley because many locals kept detailed accounts (today we might call them blogs) of life in the period of the Civil War. Among the most interesting of these journals is one kept by Jacob R. Hildebrand (1819-1908), a Mennonite farmer who supported the Confederacy and whose three sons served in the Confederate army.

Jacob Hildebrand was a successful farmer who owned 128 acres in two tracts. His home tract was located on Christian's Creek between Staunton and Waynesboro very near Fishersville. His ancestors were Mennonites who were among the earliest settlers of Augusta County. He and his wife Catharine had three sons, Benjamin Franklin, born in 1843, Gideon Peter, born in 1844, and Michael Conrad, born in 1847. Their only daughter, Mary Susan, arrived in 1848.

Hildebrand's journal carefully chronicles his daily life on the farm and in the community. Although it is evident that he kept a journal throughout the war, only certain sections survive: March-June 1862 and July-May 1865. These two periods represent the height of the war in the Valley—the first during Jackson's famous Valley campaign and the second during Hunter's raid and Sheridan's seizure of the area. We frequently hear about Hildebrand's religious and farming activities as well as his concerns for the welfare of the Confederate army and of his three soldier sons.

Hildebrand's views and activities were not in conformity with the views of many other area Mennonites who opposed the bearing of arms and participating in political affairs. He participated actively in local politics and was a vocal supporter of the Confederate army. We see several passages where Hildebrand makes a point of observing days of prayers and humility proclaimed by President Jefferson Davis, but he paid a five hundred dollar fine in Staunton to exempt himself from military duty (47). His duty as a farmer was to grow and produce provisions for the Confederate cause. We see many references to what he has heard about the war such as on 8 August 1864: "It is said that Grant has left Petersburg as our men had got to countermining & Blowed their mines up."(47)



John R. Hildebrand is to be congratulated for an excellent job collecting and transcribing these entries and in providing excellent introductions for each chapter. This work provides an excellent account of Augusta County farming life during the Civil War.

General American History

Joseph J. Ellis, *Revolutionary Summer: The Birth of American Independence*. New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 2013. 219 pp.

Noted historian Joseph J. Ellis argues convincingly in his latest book, *Revolutionary Summer: The Birth of American Independence*, that the middle months of the summer of 1776 were the most critical moments in American history. It was at this time that a loose conglomeration of states somehow put their many differences aside and arrived at a startling conclusion—that independence, the creation of a new nation, was the only feasible step.

The most difficult task for the new nation was the creation of a standing army. There were several factors that stood in the way of this goal. Most of the colonies preferred to offer militias, men who would fight for a limited amount of time and then quickly return home. They were reluctant to provide both the manpower and money necessary to form a true army. George Washington argued, almost in vain, that the destruction of this army would mean the rapid termination of the dream of independence.

The British evacuation of Boston in 1775 created a false sense of euphoria among the American advocates of independence. The British government, determined to keep the colonies at all cost, decided to force a showdown by taking New York, even then the economic nerve center and leading port. Washington, a British-trained officer hobbled by traditional notions of honor and virtue, was determined to face the British in a military showdown in Brooklyn and Manhattan. But bad luck as well as blunders by Washington and his staff led to a series of quick and rather devastating military defeats and a disorderly retreat to Brooklyn Heights and Manhattan.

The British army of 32,000 men had a large segment of Washington's forces trapped at Brooklyn Heights on 27 August 1776. British General William Howe could have totally destroyed the Continental Army had they attacked that night, but he hoped that by sparing their obliteration Washington and his cohorts would come to realize the futility of their fight and surrender peacefully. But that night Colonel John Glover and his small Marblehead Massachusetts regiment, all of them experienced sailors, managed to smuggle Washington's army across the East River in a deep fog. When the British invaded Manhattan two weeks later, the remnants of the American army crossed the Hudson to the relative safety of New Jersey.

Ellis is correct when he writes:

[T]he New York campaign of 1776 loomed large, for this was the most vulnerable moment, when the Continental Army nearly ceased to exist. Indeed a history of the war from the perspective that survival was the key to success



featured the near-miraculous escape across the East River in August 1776 and the endurance of the Continental Army at Valley Forge in the winter of 1777, even more than the dramatic victories at Saratoga and Yorktown, as the decisive events....Washington's own cast of mind about the course of the conflict assumed a providential character based on recollections of the summer of '76. For he realized, more than most, that the decision to defend New York had been a monumental blunder, rescued from catastrophe only by some combination of sheer luck and the inexplicable reticence of the Howes. This is what he meant when he described the American victory as a "standing miracle" that came about because of "a combination of causes, which in all probability at no time, or under any circumstances, will combine again." (174)

Ellis analyzes the fight for New York from both sides and makes it clear that the British had a unique opportunity to end the war right there and then. He provides fascinating detail to show how British inaction and overconfidence and the tenacity of American forces allowed the fight to go on.

Ellis takes us back and forth between Congress meeting in Philadelphia and Washington struggling for survival in New York. The key man in Philadelphia was John Adams who was in charge of procuring money and supplies for the Continental Army. Ellis provides a detailed study of the struggle of pro-independence leaders like Adams to move more hesitant members to support independence. He shows how the power of public pressure and the creation of a provisional state government made up of independence supporters forced their congressional delegation to finally adopt their cause.

Revolutionary Summer is a scholarly book written in a clear, lucid manner that will appeal to the general reader. We come away with a vivid picture of the precarious nature of the transitional summer of 1776 and shake our heads at the stupidity of the British who just sat around drinking tea which in retrospect meant that they snatched defeat from the jaws of victory. Good research and excellent writing make this book a minor masterpiece for the general public.

Michael Golay, *America 1933: The Great Depression, Lorena Hickok, Eleanor Roosevelt, and the Shaping of the New Deal*. New York: Simon & Schuster, 2013. 316 pp.

A few years ago a major American news magazine conducted a poll among historians asking for a list of the 100 most influential women through history. When the returns came in Eleanor Roosevelt (1884-1962) was the overwhelming choice for number one. ER never held political office, but during the administration of her husband, Franklin D. Roosevelt (1933-1945), she acted as FDR's "eyes and ears." She toured the country and even went

-190-



into coal mines to see the state of the country and to learn about the hardships so many millions of Americans were experiencing during the Great Depression. She also advised FDR on the formulation of policy initiatives and legislation that played a key role in the evolution of the New Deal era.

The Great Depression had a devastating effect on American society and no time was worse than 1933, the first year of the Roosevelt presidency. FDR came to office with a strong desire to help the suffering and to revive the economy, but without a clear plan of how to cope with the crisis. One of the keys to policy formulation would be to get a clear picture of the devastation afflicting so many Americans. The person chosen for this difficult task was Lorena Hickok (1893-1968), a former top woman news reporter for the Associated Press who was assigned to cover ER during the 1932 campaign and who became an intimate friend of the future First Lady.

After FDR became President, ER persuaded New Deal administrator Harry Hopkins (1890-1946) to hire Hickok to traverse the country to report back to the White House on the impact of both the Great Depression and federal relief efforts. Hickok drove herself over thousands of miles to virtually every region in the continental United States over a period of 18 months from January 1933 to August 1934. It was quite an adventure as she interviewed thousands of Americans, starving unemployed miners to wealthy executives to get a broad picture of the crisis. From coal country to the Dust Bowl, from rural Southern towns and San Francisco docks to the slums of New York, Hickok conducted a remarkable series of interviews with indigent men and women, relief workers, labor leaders, business owners, politicians, and others. As she traveled Hickok wrote a steady stream of reports back to Hopkins and ER.

Michael Golay, a teacher of history at Phillips Exeter Academy in Exeter, New Hampshire, and author of several books on nineteenth-century American history, has penned a very interesting study of Hickok's travels and her reports. Through Hickok's eyes we get a very clear picture of the gravity of the crisis caused by the Depression.

By March 1933, twenty-five percent of the U.S. workforce was unemployed, and as many as a third of the rest were working "short time." As the American economy collapsed, millions of Americans faced homelessness and hunger. Many Americans were deeply depressed and there was talk of revolution everywhere. Hickok found the worst conditions in West Virginia and Kentucky where thousands of unemployed starving miners and their families lived with intense desperation. Conditions were hardly any better in North Dakota:

Bottineau County might have been the most distressed district in North Dakota in the fall of 1933. The inhabitants moved about in a daze. "A sort of nameless dread hangs over the place," Hickok wrote. And it wasn't just the past summer's hail. Harvests had been poor for four years running. Grasshoppers had infested the region during the previous two summers, depositing their eggs in the soil, the farmers said, assuring a return of the scourge in



1934. Hickok had grown up in Wisconsin and South Dakota, but perhaps the ferocity of the plains winters had faded from her memory. In early 1933 the temperature had dropped to forty below in Bottineau and hovered there for ten days, with fifty mile-per-hour winds blowing ceaselessly. "And entering that kind of winter we have between 4,000 and 5,000 human beings – men, women and children—without clothing or bedding, getting just enough food to keep them from starving," she lamented.(160)

Hopkins, working under a mandate established by FDR, created the Federal Emergency Relief Administration in early 1933 to deal with the immediate problems facing the unemployed and under-employed. FERA provided direct aid to states which funneled money through local agencies. The program was plagued by varying degrees of corruption and inefficiency. Later in 1933 Hopkins created the Civil Works Administration, designed to be a short-term jobs program that emphasized manual labor like building new and repairing old roads, developing city parks and the like.

One of Hickok's responsibilities was to report back on the effectiveness of these programs. She found endemic corruption and inexperienced mishandling of funds, but was surprised at the very positive CWA responses—people were desperate for work, hated collecting financial assistance, and wanted to work for their pay. The wages paid by CWA were higher than those local farmers and other employers paid their workers leading to complaints that CWA was draining away labor from local employers.

When Hickok went to the Deep South she experienced the entrenched segregation of the period, but she herself had a very low opinion of many of the Blacks she met. She wrote ER and Hopkins a series of reports that compared some of the Blacks she met to animals thus reflecting her own prejudices and fears and demonstrating her own limitations as a neutral observer.

Golay concludes the book discussing Hickok's legacy. "Hickok's historical legacy rests with her influence on Hopkins's welfare and jobs policies in a time when, for millions of ordinary people, a little help from the larger community meant the difference between hunger and subsistence, numb despair and a stirring of hope. Above all, it rests in the incomparable narrative record she left of America in the depth of the Great Depression." (268)

The great value of this book is the comprehensive and detailed chronicle of the Depression that Michael Golay gives us. It is a stark reminder of how deep the crisis was and even though it tried hard to help all unfortunates, it took a long time for FDR's programs to kick in and actually help people. Golay's conclusion is short and weak, failing to look back on the whole Depression to evaluate the effectiveness of FDR's programs and how they were administered. Golay's work is nevertheless an interesting addition to the vast and growing literature on the Great Depression.

Natalie Dykstra, *Clover Adams: A Gilded and Heartbreaking Life*. Boston: Houghton Mifflin, 2013

Henry Adams (1838-1918) was one of the most distinguished scholars



in late nineteenth-century America. The grandson and great-grandson of two American presidents, Henry Adams was one of our great historians. He was no academic recluse turning out obscure tomes hidden deep in some ancient library. Rather, he was a very public figure well known as a scholar, journalist, journal editor and close friend to numerous presidents, politicians, and other leading figures of his day. His book, *The Education of Henry Adams*, is often praised as one of the most important non-fiction books of the twentieth century. His wife, born Marion Hooper but better known as "Clover," (1843-1885) came from a wealthy and intellectually distinguished Massachusetts family. She appeared well suited to Henry when they married in 1872. She was well-educated, athletic and highly intelligent and independent. Their 1872 marriage quickly deteriorated and contributed to her suicide.

Natalie Dykstra, a professor of English at Hope College in Michigan, has written a rich biography of Clover that focuses not only on her obvious strengths, but also her moodiness, occasional deep depression, loneliness, and unhappiness in a marriage that tragically led to her suicide in 1885. She was very attached to her father to whom she dutifully wrote long letters every Sunday, but when he died, she sunk into deeper depression and only eight months later took her own life.

On the surface Henry and Clover Adams lived sumptuous lives at the height of the Gilded Age. Soon after their marriage Henry resigned his position as Professor of History at Harvard and moved to Washington where they built a large and fancy house on Lafayette Square near the White House and next door to the new home of one of his closest friends, eventual Secretary of State John Hay. They entertained such luminaries as Henry Games, architect H. H. Richardson, Henry Cabot Lodge and many others.

The Adams' had wealth, good health and intellectually rich lives, but neither was happy in their marriage. Their honeymoon included a slow trip down the Nile, but instead of exploring the pyramids with her husband, Clover had a nervous breakdown which was a harbinger of bad times to come. Though they continued to have periods of happiness, they gradually grew further and further apart and communicated less and less.

Clover is one of many women attracted and attached to powerful men who reap some benefits from the relationship but are also personally and creatively stifled by them. She was isolated and alone as Henry Adams threw himself ever more deeply into his historical writing. His work led to several true masterpieces, but left his wife increasingly isolated. She became even more depressed when Senator Donald Cameron joined their social circle and introduced his gorgeous and very young wife Lizzie Cameron to Henry Adams, who quickly fell deeply in love with her. Clover became deeply depressed after the death of her father in 1885 and committed suicide later that same year.

Professor Dykstra has written a deeply-moving portrait of this remarkable, but little understood woman. Her work is both lucid and well-researched.



Nathaniel Philbrick, *Custer, Sitting Bull and the Battle of the Little Bighorn*. New York: Doubleday, 2011.

George Armstrong Custer (1839-1876) remains one of the iconic figures in the settling of the American West. He was a flamboyant figure who represents both the best and the worst elements of the American military tradition. He graduated last in his class at West Point, but was a brilliant cavalry officer during the Civil War. He led a Michigan cavalry contingent at Gettysburg that broke the Confederate's final charge which helped to swing the battle and thus the war to the Union. He later played a leading role here in the Valley at the end of the War including the battle of Waynesboro and the final occupation of Staunton.

Custer, however, was possibly a narcissist who thought only of advancing his own reputation. If others benefitted from his triumphs, those gains were secondary to his own ambitions. After the Civil War Custer became a prominent Indian fighter. By the late 1860s he was appointed lieutenant colonel of the newly created US 7th Cavalry and later became a brevet major general on the recommendation of General Philip Sheridan who had known Custer all too well in the final stages of the Civil war in the Valley. Custer gained further fame when he led the 7th Cavalry in an attack on the Cheyenne encampment of Black Kettle, the Battle of Washita River, in November 1868. But despite his fame, he was also court-martialed for deserting his men to make an unauthorized visit with his wife.

Custer enjoyed good fortune, something he called "Custer luck." His boldness and disobeying orders could have led him to disaster, but each time he managed to squeeze out a victory or survive a scandal. He saw the 1876 campaign against Sitting Bull's Lakota Sioux as the capstone to his career. If he won a great victory, he would leave the military, travel home to accolades across the East, make a fortune on a grand lecture tour, and maybe make a run for the presidency. His superior, General Terry, gave Custer a free hand to attack the Sioux in the way he saw best, but Custer recklessly divided his regiment into three sections. Custer took his 270 men and made an insanely stupid attack on the main Lakota village before finding him and his men surrounded by well over a thousand furious and better armed Sioux who slaughtered every man in Custer's group.

Custer's defeat shocked the nation, but the supreme irony is that the battle need not have happened at all. Sitting Bull, a clever and conciliatory politician, was ready to make peace and to accompany Custer back to a nearby reservation. Shortly after the battle Sitting Bull and his followers escaped to Canada and five years later peacefully returned to live on the Standing Rock reservation in South Dakota.

Nathaniel Philbrick is a masterful historian and story teller. He describes the final campaigns of Custer and the 7th US Cavalry in incredible detail. His writing, lucid and very engaging, is very fair. We get a good objective and very well researched account of Custer's life and his final



campaign. We see how Custer's recklessness contributed greatly to his demise and the slaughter of his men, but we also come to fully understand that the faulty planning and instructions by General Terry and other officers also played a critical role in Custer's disaster. Custer was counting on other contingents of the 7th Cavalry to join in his attack on the village, but they never showed up. But Custer should never have attacked without the clear support of other units. Philbrick does a fine job of giving the reader the "big picture."

Philbrick has introduced Custer to a new generation of readers and has done a fine job in doing so.

Doris Kearns Goodwin, *The Bully Pulpit: Theodore Roosevelt, William Howard Taft and the Golden Age of Journalism*. New York: Simon & Schuster, 2013.

One can very definitely draw some comparisons between the political trauma of today with the politics of the early years of the twentieth century. There were the massive corporations such as Standard Oil and U.S. Steel which were making huge profits. The growing gap between the wealthy company directors and the average worker was huge and the conservative wing of the Republican Party was doing everything it could to protect the wealth and power of the major corporations. Progressive politicians worked hard to curtail the power of the major corporations and investigative reporters inflamed public passions by exposing the alleged sins of corporate America. Perhaps the greatest difference today is that while the Republican Party had a strenuous progressive wing, the GOP of today is the captive of radical conservatives.

Doris Kearns Goodwin has written one of the best studies of the so-called "Progressive Era." She pays a great deal of attention to the investigative journalism of the period led by a team of hard working and brilliant journalists who worked for *McClure's Magazine*. These muckraking journalists showed the horrific condition of workers in factories while factory owners made huge profits and they also demonstrated the pernicious influence that the money of the wealthy had on politics. They demonstrated over and over the hold that these millionaire businessmen had on the Republican Party. Writers such as Ida Tarbell, Ray Stannard Baker, and Lincoln Steffens galvanized popular opinion against the huge trusts.

Two key politicians, themselves great friends, propelled themselves into the leadership of the country, Theodore Roosevelt and William Howard Taft. Roosevelt was a forceful and vociferous politician who, though himself quite wealthy, saw the need to support the progressive muckrakers. He worked with them to help create a major political movement to use the government as the key tool to regulate and inspect the work and products of the major corporations. Roosevelt inspired the role of government as referee and inspector of the business world. He was also a significant conservationist.



Taft, on the other hand, was a mild mannered and very likeable politician who did his best to carry on the Roosevelt tradition when he became President in 1909. Goodwin correctly points out that Taft actually won more antitrust suits than Roosevelt, but TR felt that Taft was too weak to stand up to the conservative hierarchy of the GOP. These feelings plus intense personal ambition led to TR's attempt to derail Taft's presidency in 1912, which in turn destroyed them both and led to the minority presidency of Staunton's own Woodrow Wilson.

In "*The Bully Pulpit*," Doris Kearns Goodwin shows the key role the muckrakers played in creating the popular force to bring political change in early twentieth-century America. She also demonstrates the power that an ambitious man can generate in Roosevelt and the lack of confidence a quiet conciliator like Taft can generate. I have read many books about TR, Taft and the Progressive era, but few can compare to the clear vision of this era that Goodwin provides us. There is good writing, excellent research, and superb analysis in this marvelous work.

Earle Labor, *Jack London: An American Life*. New York: Farrar, Strauss and Giroux, 2013.

A few years ago my daughter Katie Metraux, who does historic preservation work and other related activities for the California State Park Service, told me about the work she and several colleagues were doing to restore Jack London's home in Glen Ellen, California. I had always been rather curious about this incredibly productive author and socialist who died at age forty in 1916 at his home, but when I went there for a visit with Katie in 2009, I got one of the biggest surprises of my life. I saw a large portrait of London standing with Japanese military officers checking his travel documents in Korea in 1904 at the start of the Russo-Japanese War. Japanese history is my passion and main field of study, so I exclaimed, "What the Hell was London doing there?"

Well, it turns out that London was no stranger to Japan, Korea or China. At age seventeen in 1893 he had signed on as a sailor on a sealing vessel that traveled to the coastal waters of Siberia in search of profitable seal skins. His ship docked at Japanese ports on the way to and from the seal killing grounds and London used his few weeks in Japan to explore and learn as much as he could about Japan. He took up writing short stories soon after his return to California and it is hardly surprising that several of his early tales were written about Japanese topics. Later in 1904, when London had become one of the most widely read authors in the United States, the Hearst newspapers set him to Japan, Korea and China to cover the Russo-Japanese War (1904-1905). He spent more than four months chasing the Japanese army through Korea into Manchuria.

During and after his time in Korea and Manchuria, London developed a complicated thesis in his 1904 essay, "The Yellow Peril," envisaging the rise



first of Japan and then China in opposition as major twentieth century economic and industrial powers. London's starting point was his suspicion the days of Western power were over and that the twentieth century would see the rise first of Japan and then China as world economic powers. He was one of the first to conceive of the idea of the Pacific Rim. London stated that Japan's imperial appetite exceeded its swallowing of Korea in the Russo-Japanese War. He anticipated that Tokyo would eventually take over Manchuria and then attempt to seize control of China in the attempt to use China's vast land, resources and labor for its own benefit.

London knew that Japan's strength at the turn of the twentieth century lay in its ability to use Western technology and its national unity. London and some other contemporary writers, as well as many politically attuned Asians recognized that Japan's defeat of Russia was a turning point in a history of Asian subjugation to white imperial powers. Japan's victory called into question as no previous event the innate superiority of the white race. However, London believed that there were severe limits on Japan's ability to become a leading world power. However impressive its initial gains, Tokyo would falter from lack of "staying power." One reason was that it was too small. Although it had humbled Russian forces, London believed that it was not sufficiently powerful to create a massive Asian empire, still less to threaten the West either militarily or economically. Seizing "poor, empty Korea for a breeding colony and Manchuria for a granary" would greatly enhance Japan's population and strength—but that was not enough to challenge the great powers.

Although aroused, China's vast potential at that time was hindered. Its leaders hung tenaciously to the past. Clinging to power and tradition, they refuse to modernize and so China's fate is uncertain. London does not tell the reader who will prevail. However, in his 1906 short story, "The Unparalleled Invasion," London develops the theme of China's rise. The Japanese are expelled from China and are crushed when they try to reassert themselves there. China then becomes a major power after a socialist revolution there overthrows the old order.

Writing a century ago, London warned that the imperial West, blissfully ignorant of what awaited it, was living in a bubble. The shift of power to Asia was the prick that would burst it. The transition would be peaceful because Asia's rise was primarily economic, but eventually war between East and West was inevitable because China challenged the economic might of the West. Although critics have read different messages into the story, the clear irony is that the West is the paranoid aggressor. It is a White Peril and China is the innocent victim.

But "contrary to expectation, China did not prove warlike [so] after a time of disquietude, the idea was accepted that China was not to be feared in war, but in commerce." The West would come to understand that the "real danger" from China "lay in the fecundity of her loins." As the twentieth-century advances, the story depicts Chinese immigrants swarming



into French Indochina and later into Southwest Asia and Russia, seizing territory. Western attempts to slow or stem the Chinese tide all fail. By 1975 it appears that this onslaught will overwhelm the world. With despair mounting, an American scientist, Jacobus Laningdale, visits the White House to propose eradicating the entire Chinese population. He aims to drop deadly plagues from Allied airships over China. In May, 1976, the bombers appear over China and release a torrent of glass tubes.⁷ At first nothing happens, and then an inferno of plagues gradually wipes out the entire population. Allied armies surround China and all Chinese die.

London's understanding of and deep appreciation for Asians and Asia was remarkable for his time. He had a brilliant mind and was fascinated with many topics which give such a broad diversity in his writing. London's life itself was an adventure and he often brought his experiences into his writing. He was a fine novelist and short-story teller, but his articles about Korea and Koreans and other peoples of the Pacific demonstrate his skill as an essayist and ethnographer. My favorite London book is his *People of the Abyss*, a study of the tragic lives of the residents of London's East End. It is a devastating portrait of poverty and desperation in the wealthiest city in the world less than a mile from the opulence of Buckingham Palace

Earle Labor has produced the most comprehensive and best researched biography of Jack London to date. His hero is one of the most difficult lives to chronicle because London led so many different lives, sometimes at once. Before he was twenty-one he was an oyster pirate in San Francisco Bay, a fourteen-year-old alcoholic, deck hand on a sealing expedition to Japan and Siberia, a hobo train-hopping across the country, an active socialist speaker and writer, and a gold prospector in the Klondike. He later produced fifty novels, many more short stories, covered two wars as a highly appreciated journalist, and made two unsuccessful runs as the socialist candidate for mayor of Oakland, California. The result is that each segment of London's life could fill several hundred pages, but Professor Labor limits himself to 480 pages. Thus the full extent of London's work in East Asia and his uncanny ability to see the future rise of Japan and China receives short shrift.

Earl Labor is a skilled researcher and energetic and clear writer, much like his hero. Anybody desiring to learn more about the life of London would do well to read this marvelous biography.

Nathaniel Philbrick, *Bunker Hill: A City, A Siege, A Revolution*. New York: Viking, 2014

There are many legends about the start of the American Revolution in Boston in 1775 and 1776. We often hear of the famous ride of Paul Revere, the confrontation between British regulars and members of the Massachusetts militia at Concord and Lexington, and the raucous battle at Bunker Hill. What we need is a good historical narrative to tie all of these events together. Fortunately we have on in historian Nathaniel Philbrick's new work, *Bunker Hill: A City, A Siege, A Revolution*.



Philbrick's tale is very complex. We see a Boston and a Massachusetts that has developed its own culture and traditions of freedom and self-government in the 140 years since its founding. It is a wealthy center of commerce and manufacturing by the 1760s and 1770s, but when the British begin imposing not unreasonable taxes and restrictions on their American subjects, the people of Boston are outraged at the threat to their traditional liberties.

Bostonians such as Samuel Adams began advocating independence long before the idea caught on elsewhere in the thirteen colonies. The dumping of tea into Boston Harbor, however, elicited a very harsh response from the British including the closing all commerce in and out of Boston and the military occupation of the city. Rather than caving in, Bostonians and their allies prepared to resist which led to the armed confrontations at Lexington and Concord, several other skirmishes, and eventually the fight for Bunker Hill and the destruction of the large town of Charlestown. Bunker Hill was the bloodiest battle of the war.

By the time we finish the book we become very familiar with a whole host of characters including Philbrick's devoted hero, Dr. Joseph Warren. We get to know and even respect the British Royal Governor, General Gage, who did everything in his power to avoid a war.

Philbrick's *Bunker Hill* is a masterpiece of historical writing. I have read dozens of books about the early period of the American Revolution and have made hundreds of visits to such places as Concord, but it wasn't until I read this book that I got a really clear picture of what happened.

John Matteson, *The Lives of Margaret Fuller: A Biography*. New York: W. W. Norton & Co., 2012.

Thinkers and writers living in the rustic village of Concord Massachusetts in the early mid-nineteenth century had a most profound effect on the future intellectual and social development of American society. Transcendentalist writers and lecturers like Ralph Waldo Emerson, Nathaniel Hawthorne, Henry David Thoreau, and Bronson Alcott were among the exponents of new ways of thinking and of looking at the world. Many of our modern ideas on the environment, social equality, public education, civil disobedience and much more originated with these major thinkers and writers.

Margaret Fuller (1810-1850) was another critical participant in the intellectual ferment of Concord. The daughter of Massachusetts Congressman Timothy Fuller, she grew up in Cambridge and Boston. She was an avid reader and took full advantage of the chance her father provided to study in the best schools in Boston. Her reading and education encouraged her inquisitive mind, but as a woman her professional prospects were few. She was also overweight, acne-plagued, socially awkward and painfully shy, but she was somehow able to transcend these negative assets to become one of the leading feminists of the nineteenth century.



Margaret Fuller's most enduring legacy is her 1843 book, *Women in the Nineteenth Century*, which has its core theme the idea that all human beings, both male and female, have the ability, right and duty to strive towards perfection. Fuller was greatly influenced by the Romantic writers of Europe, especially by Goethe. Like other transcendentalists, she believed in the potential divinity of all humans. She wrote that "for an earnest soul, to rise continually toward the celestial was a matter not just of destiny but of quasi-religious duty." Since all humans had this potential in them, there must be an inherent equality of the sexes.

Fuller had to support herself through teaching at a number of preparatory schools, but this was made difficult by chronic bad health. Nevertheless, her impetuous desire to stimulate her mind led to a complex web of friendships that included Emerson. She established her own intellectual community in Boston in her early twenties with regularly scheduled "conversations" with other intelligent women where they could develop ideas on some of the more pressing ideas of the day. According to author Matteson, these sessions permitted Fuller "to impart her own message, gaining in certainty and confidence with every session, that women had a new purpose to serve and a higher destiny to fulfill."

Emerson shrewdly appointed Fuller editor of the short-lived but very influential transcendentalist journal the *Dial*. By 1844 through her friendship with Mary Greeley, the wife of newspaper editor Horace Greeley, she accepted a post on the *New York Tribune* as a critic. Greeley in 1846 sent her to Europe to cover the political ferment that led to the many revolutions of 1848-1849. By 1847 Fuller had settled in Rome and covered the revolutionary situation there where many citizens of Rome fought to the death to create their own city state and to shake off papal rule. She met and fell in love with a young Italian marquis, Angelo Ossoli. They married after the birth of their son, but the threesome died tragically when on a voyage to New York in July 1850, their boat sunk off Fire Island and drowned them. Also tragic was the loss of the manuscript of her planned book on the failed revolution in Rome.

John Matteson has written a rich and compelling biography of Fuller in his *The Lives of Margaret Fuller*. A professor of English at the John Jay College of Criminal Justice in New York, Matteson won a Pulitzer Prize in 2008 for his book, *Eden's Outcasts: The Story of Louisa May Alcott and Her Father*. The strength of the book comes early in his analysis of her education and growth as a young woman, though at times the reader is overwhelmed by intricate details that do not add too much to the text. The work is meticulously researched and gives a sound portrait not only of Fuller's life, but also cultural life on Beacon Hill and in Concord. We also get a view of cultural life in New York in the 1840s. All in all, this is a fine read of the life of the leading American female scholar of the nineteenth century—a life so tragically terminated so young.



Recent Acquisitions of the Augusta County Historical Society, 2013-2014

The archival collection of the Augusta County Historical Society continues to grow. Since the list printed in last year's issue of the Bulletin, we have added sixty-five more collections and cataloged a large number of older acquisitions. More than sixty-seven persons from twelve states have come to our offices to use our collections. Thirty-two persons and institutions have donated new items to the archives. We are very much indebted to these donors for their gifts. Donors include Edward Craig Norman, Shirley G. Roby, Louise S. Grove, Janet and Earl Downs, Nancy Sorrells, Theodore G. Shuey, Jr., Dr. E.W. Stephenson, Jennifer Vickers, Doug Cochran, Alan Smith, Thomas T. Jeffries, Dr. Ann McCleary, Gerould Pangburn, Dale Dailey, John and Harriett Sherwood, J.B. Yount III, Marianne Bonatakis, Dr. Katharine L. Brown, John Hildebrand, Jr., William W. Reynolds, Dr. Ken Keller, Jim McCloskey, Dr. Daniel Métraux, Alan Shirkey, Dean and Irene Sarnelle, Ben Ritter, Katharine Ballard Sampson, Dorothy Parrish, the Augusta County Genealogical Society, Western State Hospital, the Montgomery County Historical Society, the Augusta Military Academy Foundation, the Virginia Museum of Transportation in Roanoke, the Middlesex County Museum and Historical Society in Saluda, the Waynesboro Public Library, and the Waynesboro Heritage Museum. Many thanks to these people and organizations for their generous contributions to our collections. We have added these new collections to the archives so that now more than 2,200 entries are listed in the computerized PastPerfect catalog of our holdings. The society continues to collect materials that focus on Augusta County, Staunton, and Waynesboro as well as the Valley of Virginia and neighboring counties and areas. The historical society, which is not a lending library, welcomes researchers to come to the society to use its library and collections. The list of the recent acquisitions below shows well the broad scope and content of what we provide for historical research to people who come to our offices.

—Dr. Ken Keller, Archivist, Augusta County Historical Society

Recent Acquisitions

2013.0050 Dr. Ann McCleary Book Collection 2 books, Campbell County Historical Society, Campbell County (2012); Dr. Ann McCleary, Survey of the village of Mt. Sidney (1999)



2013.0051 116th Brigade Museum Audio-Visual Tour CD Compact disc, tour of the museum of the 116th Brigade (the Stonewall Brigade) in Verona; narrated by Edward Craig Norman, Director. The collection of the museum came from Staunton's Thomas D. Howie Armory museum, which was closed to the general public in the wake of 9/11.

2013.0052 Western State Hospital Collection A collection of materials pertaining to former locations of Western State Hospital. The collection includes architectural drawings by J. C. Nielsen (1890-1893), aerial photographs, blueprints, maps, plans, diplomas, planning boards, a file on the "Wherry Building," and a photograph of wards. A permanent loan.

2013.0053 Augusta County Genealogical Society Newspaper Collection A collection of Virginia newspapers, either whole issues, sections, or clippings for years 1937-1945. Newspapers include *The Roanoke Times*, *The Southwest Times*, *Richmond Times-Dispatch*, *Staunton News-Leader*, and *The Highland Recorder*. There are numerous issues about World War II events. Also a U.S. Bicentennial Commemorative Issue and an Augusta County 250th Anniversary issue.

2013.0054 Hogshead Compass and Chain Augusta County Surveyor's Compass with chain dated 1797; belonged to and made by Augusta County Assistant Surveyor Charles Hogshead (1769-1843).

2013.0055 Parrish Collection 3 snapshots of Stuarts Draft building, Rt. 340 and Stuart Avenue, formerly an African-American school, grades 1-7

2013.0056 Augusta County Historical Society Records, 1964-2003 A collection of the early records of the Augusta County Historical Society. Including administrative files, accountant reports, membership rosters, treasurer's reports, lists of maps, tax forms, manuscripts, minutes, lists of acquisitions, a cemetery index, business records, atlas orders, receipts journal, invoices, audit records, investments, correspondence, notebooks, archivist's records, scrapbooks, clippings, and photographs.

2013.0057 Society Miscellaneous Collection A collection of items in 5 folders of booklets, clippings, photographs, photocopies, receipts, postcards, and brochures. Includes a *History of the Augusta County American Red Cross, 1917-1918*; the *Augusta Seminary Annual* [an Augusta Female Seminary, i.e. M.B.C., literary magazine], 1893; clippings from *Women's Home Companion* and *Good Housekeeping*, 1921; photographs of the Lewis Street post office, the Gypsy Hill Park swimming pool excavation, Trinity Church, the Wilson Brothers Drug Store, and Fred Rosen; a business card; typescripts; salary receipts; 3 postcards; a photograph of Co. L, 116th Infantry, Virginia National Guard, 1926, at Virginia Beach; photographs of Fort Lewis, Bellefont; a photocopy, examination of the records of the Staunton Academy, 1792-1808, with list of original members since 1792; photocopy of C. W. Burwell, 1860; newspaper clipping, the move of Western State Hospital patients to new hospital, 1973; photocopies of Stonewall Jackson Camp, United Confederate Veterans; photocopy; the Herr family house; road tax receipt, Riverheads Township, 1874 [note "township". Townships were briefly used in Virginia after the Civil War]; program, "Jumbo Day," Staunton Fire Department; postcard. "Jumbo," 1911 model

2013.0058 Windy Cove Presbyterian Church Booklet Booklet about Millboro Springs Presbyterian congregation, 1749-1929

2013.0059 Captain Samuel Brown Coyner Memoir Typescript and pho-



tocopy, Memoir of Captain Samuel Brown Coyner, 1889 [contains information about Civil War and family genealogy]

2013.0060 North River Area Schools Typescript Photocopy and typescript, Schools of the North River Area [prepared by the North River Bicentennial Committee, 1976; includes written sketches of schools of Moscow, Springhill, Centerville, Mount Solon, Parnassas, Sangerville, Mountain View, and North River (1930-1976). Published in the 2013 issue of the *Augusta Historical Bulletin*.

2013.0061 Johnny Appleseed Book Book, Will Moses, *Johnny Appleseed: The Story of a Legend* (2001)

2014.0001 Trinity Episcopal Church Collection 11 folders; a collection of research materials used in writing parish history of Trinity Episcopal Church, "*Conformable to the Doctrine and Discipline*"—*A History of Trinity Church Augusta Parish, Staunton, Virginia, 1746-1996*, by Katharine L. Brown, J. Susanne Simmons, and Nancy T. Sorrells. The collection includes printed ephemera and photocopies of photographs, materials on the congregation's 250th anniversary, newspaper documents, confirmation classes, architecture, journals of the Episcopal Church conventions with references to Trinity Church, biographies of rectors and lay leaders, and the Staunton ministerial association

2014.0002 Ever Forward! Book Book, Theodore Shuey, Jr., *Ever Forward!—The Story of the Story of the Nation's Oldest and Most Historic Military Units* (2008) [history of the Augusta County Militia—Stonewall Brigade—116th Infantry; autographed]

2014.0003 Stevenson Photographs of Craigsville/Fordwick Parade 5 snapshots of 4th of July parade of July 4, 1919 in Craigsville/Fordwick, site of Lehigh Portland Cement Plant; one photograph shows nurses; 1 snapshot shows baseball team on July 4, 1919

2014.0004 Dr. Katharine L. Brown Collection 6 folders pertaining to the following families and military activities: Breckenridge; Houston and Montgomery; Preston and Brown [letters]; Buchanan; the Augusta County Court Martial Book; Military Records of Augusta Indian captives

2014.0005 L.H. Surratt Ledger Ledger, in two parts; first part, 1882-1885, compiler unidentified—hardware merchant, Staunton; second part, 1938-1939, L.H. Surratt, wages and Social Security deductions listed

2014.0006 Compact Disc Postcard Views of Staunton Collection Compact disc, "26+ Views of Staunton"; includes screen saver; images of scanned postcards include Staunton Military Academy; restricted—for personal use, not commercial use, only

2014.0007 Jennifer Vickers Collection A collection of 5 folders and loose newspapers, some of which are fragments. Newspapers are the *Staunton Mirror*, October 1, 1964; January 7, 1965; January 14, 1965; the *Staunton Leader*, Cook of the Week Review, January 1973; issues of the *Staunton Leader*, November 24, 1958; September 15, 1964; *Staunton Daily Leader*, July 1, 1916; *Evening Leader*, May 14, 1946; January 8, 1951; April 5, 1954; December 5, 1957; *News Leader*, December 18, 1966. The 5 folders contain 2 photographic prints of presentation of a certificate and a check to 2 different recipients; 2 programs of the Virginia Alpha Delta Kappa banquet, 1973 [an honorary sorority for women educators]; 2 photographs of African-American women's hair styles, person unidentified; photograph, unidentified group of African-Americans at social occasion; 2 unidenti-



fied laminated photographs of African-American women; snapshots of a banquet, 1990; plastic portfolio for the Virginia State Beauticians Association [an organization of African-American professional beauticians]; Cosmetology Club minutes, 1980s-1991, taken by Rosalie Vickers; roster, Virginia State Beauticians Association; clippings including one of an African-American woman cutting hair in Crawford's Barber Shop [Frederick Street?]; programs for meetings; donation acknowledgments from the Red Cross and the Rockbridge Area Presbyterian Home; list of charitable donations of the Cosmetology Club to Various organizations and persons including Rescue Squad, DeJarnette, Effie Miller, United Negro College Fund, and money given to members who lost members of their families; itinerary, Cosmetology Club trip to Atlantic City casinos, 1985, 1986

2014.0008 John Hale Augusta County Map Augusta County map, 1958, drawn and signed cartographer John Hale of the Old Dominion Map Company, and inscribed to J.S. Cochran, Jr.

2014.0009 Bosserman Family Photographs 2 cabinet card photographs of the Bosserman family, late nineteenth century; 1 photograph of Christian Robert Bosserman and Mary Catherine Garden (1881); 1 photograph of David Bosserman and Sarah Hemp Bosserman (undated)

2014.0011 Thomas T. Jeffries, III, Book Book, Thomas T. Jeffries, III, *Kenton Harper, Citizen, Soldier* (2013); signed by author. Book published by the Augusta County Historical Society. Harper was a soldier in the Mexican and Civil Wars and editor of the *Staunton Spectator*, one of the city's two newspapers.

2014.0012 Gerould Pangburn Collection A collection in two series. Series 1 is a collection of newspapers pertaining to 9/11 and Operation Desert Shield (1991); Series 2 is a collection of memorabilia about Robert E. Lee High School, 1911-1927. Series 1: *Staunton News Leader*, January 17, 1991 [Operation Desert Shield—Kuwait]; *Staunton News Leader*, September 12, 2001–September 18, 2001; *USA Today*, September 14-16, 2001.

Series 2: Robert E. Lee High School programs: Senior Class Celebration, Staunton High School, June 7, 1911; final celebration, Phoenix and Philomathean Literary Societies, , Robert E. Lee High School, May 4, 1923; certificate of promotion, Robert E. Lee High School, June 11, 1925; Commencement ticket, Berkeley Theatre, 1926; program alumni class night, Robert E. Lee High School, June 8, 1927; program, graduation exercises, Robert E. Lee High School, June 19, 1927; invitation to graduation exercises, June 9 [no year given]; program, Robert E. Lee High School dedication, January 14-16, 1955

2014.0013 Union Army in the Valley Collection book, *The Military History of Ohio. Its Border Annals, Its Part in the Indian Wars, in the War of 1812, in the Mexican War and in the War of the Rebellion* (H.H. Hardesty, Publisher, New York, 1887); contains line drawings of Lee, Jackson, Sheridan, Sherman and detailed accounts of the 116th Ohio, the 28th Ohio, and the 36th Ohio in Virginia and the Shenandoah Valley

2014.0014 Augusta County—Images of America Book Book, Nancy Sorrells, *Augusta County—Images of America* (Arcadia Publishing, 2014); a profusely illustrated book with pre-1950 photographs of Augusta County people, places and activities. Published for the 50th anniversary year of the society as a project of the society.

2014.0015 Davis-Snell Book, Dale Dailey, *Daily-Snell Genealogy*, Part 4.



2014.0016 World War II American Guidebook: *Staunton* Spiral bound book, *The American Guidebook* (Victory Handbook Series, 1945); with numerous local advertisements; chart of insignia of Army, Navy, and Marines; sketches of U.S. Presidents up to and including FDR; instructions for writing to p.o.w.s and internees; first aid; food conservation instructions; victory gardens; roster of service personnel from Staunton; sketch of Maj. Howie and Lt. Gen. Alexander Patch

2014.0017 Saturday Evening Post Advertisement: Demonstration of the McCormick Reaper framed page from issue of *Saturday Evening Post*, March 1, 1931, with image of Cyrus Hall McCormick demonstrating the grain reaper at Steeles Tavern, Va., in 1832;

2014.0018 Augusta County Historical Society 50th Anniversary Celebration Collection poster, Golden Gala Celebration, Stonewall Jackson Hotel, April 15, 2014, laminated bookmark, new logo of the Augusta County Historical Society program, gala celebration events, April 15, 2014, poster, advertising book, *Augusta County—Images of America* (2014); resolution, mounted with core foam mat, Augusta County Board of Supervisors, March 12, 2014, in support of the activities of the Augusta County Historical Society and in honor of the society's 50th anniversary; resolution, mounted with core foam mat, Staunton City Council, March 27, 2014, in support of the activities of the Augusta County Historical Society and in honor of the society's 50th anniversary; resolution, mounted with core foam mat, Waynesboro City Council, February 24, 2014, in support of the activities of the Augusta County Historical Society and in honor of its 50th anniversary; poster, mounted on core foam, list of the Founders of the Augusta County Historical Society, Established 1964

2014.0019 Hildebrand Mennonite Journal Book, *A Mennonite Journal—1862: A Father's Account of the Civil War in the Shenandoah Valley. Second Edition.* Diary transcriptions and annotations by descendant John Hildebrand. Hildebrand, who lived in northern Augusta County west of Waynesboro, kept a diary of his activities during the Civil War. This revised reprint of the original transcription was a joint project that included the Augusta County Historical Society.

2014.0020 Backcountry Newspaper 4 issues of the defunct newspaper, *The Backcountry*—A Multi-Disciplinary Forum on Early American Frontiers, "January-October 1995 (Vols. 1-4), written and published by Lynn Coffey

2014.0021 Frontier Culture Museum Newsletter 35 issues of the newsletter of the Museum of American Frontier Culture [Frontier Culture Museum], with Various titles, Nos. 1-27 (Fall 1995-[2014])

2014.0021 Staunton Promotional Magazines 2 copies of magazine, "Discover Downtown Staunton," published by the *Staunton News Leader*, 2014, with advertisements and photographs of local businesses; 5 issues, *Staunton Life*—The Key to Your Community, monthly magazine, November 2013, February-May 2014, *Hibu Magazine*, King of Prussia, Pennsylvania; *Shenandoah Living*, May / June 2014

2014.0023 Where the River Flows Book Book, Robert R. Hewitt, III, *Where the River Flows: Finding Faith in Rockingham County, Virginia. 1726-1876* (Virginia Foundation for the Humanities, 2013)

2014.0024 Rev. Billy Hibbard's Address to the Quakers Photocopy of a book, Rev. Billy Hibbard, *An Address to the Quakers: Including the Pamphlet Entitled Errors of the Quakers, etc.* (New York, 1811). Rev. Billy Hibbard was a Methodist minister.



2014.0025 "Irene" Autograph Book Autograph book, inscribed "Irene," with inscriptions from Staunton and Greenville, 1887-1891; one autograph from Arista Hoge

2014.0026 William W. Reynolds Article Article, William W. Reynolds, "History of the Original 9th Virginia, 1776-1777," *Military Collector & Historian*, Spring 2014, Vol. 66, No. 1

2014.0027 Grand Rally of the Whigs of Augusta Handbill Handbill, "Grand Rally of the Whigs of Augusta (Augusta 26, 1844)" from James K. Polk vs. Henry Clay presidential election.

2014.0028 Bedford Index newspaper (1894) Newspaper issue, *The Bedford Index* [Bedford County, Bedford City], June 14, 1894

2014.0029 Nancy Sorrells Collection Accopress binder, photocopy, Larry Trenton Palmer and Rosemarye Johnson Archinal, Adam Palmer (1771-1864) of Augusta County Virginia (1982); Book, Richard K. Hayes, *Kate Smith—A Biography, with Discography, Filmography, and List of Stage Appearances* (1995)

2014.0030 White Star Mills Collection Flour bag, White Star Mills Honey's Best, Enriched Bleached Flour; invoice, White Star Mills High Grade Flour (1929) [sold to Craig and Doyle, Craigsville, Va.]

2014.0031 Waynesboro's Old Presbyterian Cemetery Register Pamphlet, *Waynesboro's Old Presbyterian Cemetery Register*, Waynesboro Historical Commission, Waynesboro, Va. (ca. 2003)

2014.0032 James M. McCloskey, Sr., Editorial Cartoon Collection A collection of editorial cartoons from the *Staunton Daily News Leader*, correspondence, publications, whole newspaper issues and ephemera. Jim McCloskey was editorial cartoonist for the Staunton News Leader in the 1990s starting when the newspaper was under the publishing auspices of the Opie family and Media General. The newspaper had been sold to Gannett by the time of McCloskey's departure.

2014.0033 Daniel A. Metraux Collection 3 books: Rodney Barfield, *America's Forgotten Caste* (2013) [signed by the author]; Charles Culbertson, *The Staunton, Virginia Anthology* (2013); Charles Culbertson, *Staunton, Virginia: A Treasury of Historic Tales* (2013) [signed by the author]

2014.0034 Waynesboro Sentinel Newspaper Newspaper, 1 issue of the *Waynesboro Sentinel*, June 8, 1894

2014.0035 The Jolly Flatboatmen Poster Poster, St. Louis Art Museum, George Caleb Bingham, *The Jolly Flatboatmen*. Bingham was born in northern Augusta County near Grottoes.

2014.0036 Edgemont Orchards Apple Barrel Label Edgemont Orchards Apple Barrel Label, Swoope, Va.; "grown and picked by R.M. Crowl and Son"

2014.0037 General Gilbert J. Sullivan photographic portrait photograph, 8 ½" x 11"; accompanying card in adjacent acid-free envelope marked "Gen Gilbert J. Sullivan Bde Cmdr;" Gilbert "Gilly" J. Sullivan (1928-2009) of Charlottesville, was brigade commander of the 116th Infantry Regiment (Stonewall Brigade) from 1983 to 1985; he was director of the University of Virginia Alumni Association from 1958 to 1993.

2014.0038 Alan Shirkey Transcriptions Typescript transcripts of Various Augusta County ledgers; S.M. Davidson Bell's time book; essay, the temperance movement and Friends of Temperance, Middlebrook, 1865; notes on New Hope, Augusta County Ledger/Day Book, 1878-1883; Augusta County Ledger, 1855



2014.0039 Dean and Irene Sarnelle Collection 2 legal letters, Home Owners' Loan Corporation, December 28, 1935 [E.H. DeJarnette, Jr., Attorney at Law, Orange, Va.]; ledger, wheat book of accounts, 1893-1894

2014.0040 Ben Ritter Collection 1 postcard, East Main Street, Staunton, Va., ca. 1911; photocopy, Winchester, Va., *Times*, February 5. 1890, obituary for Joseph Kercyewsky, resident of Spring Hill, age 95, shoemaker who made shoes for the Confederacy in Staunton

2014.0041 *Graham's Illustrated Magazine* Magazine, *Graham's Illustrated Magazine*, 1857-1858, published in Philadelphia; contains the story of Selim the Algerine, who was befriended by Rev. John Craig

2014.0042 Nancy Taylor Sorrells Collection 16 genealogical and military books; John A. Taylor memorabilia concerning Robert E. Lee High School reunions; a photograph of his high school reunion; catalogs and other publications of Stuart Hall and Mary Baldwin College; B.O.O.S.T. publications book with reproductions of Staunton postcards; a membership card for the Staunton Hi-Y Fellowship; clippings; obituaries

2014.0043 Hugh B. Sproul Papers Papers of Hon. Hugh B. Sproul of Staunton, member of the Virginia State Highway Commission, 1927-1929; incoming correspondence with people and organizations from throughout Virginia; many letters on letterhead; some items from Governor Harry F. Byrd's staff; maps of Warrenton area (U.S. Geological Survey map); map of proposed route of Woodrow Wilson highway, John Marshall highway, concerning the Lee-Jackson highway; many letters request local highway improvements

2014.0044 Star Theatre Program Program from motion picture theatre in Waynesboro, Va., the Star Theatre, November 16, 1925, with week's movies and advertisements from Waynesboro businesses; with "music every night" mentioned

2014.0045 Edward Beyer Lithograph of Stribling Springs Framed lithograph of Stribling Springs, published in Berlin, 1858; donated on behalf of the family of Virginia Hogshead Ballard. Stribling Springs was once managed by Virginia Ballard's grandmother, Agnes Virginia Roberts Hogshead Hanger.

2014.0046 Mossy Creek Letter Undated letter of unidentified student at Mossy Creek Academy to his mother, describing his trip up the Valley from New Market and Harrisonburg with description of the academy building and its interior including the library and chemistry laboratory

2014.0047 Staunton Pythian Sisters Record Book Record book of Pythian Sisters Temple 14, 1934-1937

2014.0048 *Life along the South River* Booklet Booklet, *Life along the South River*, Waynesboro Historical Commission, ca. 2012

2014.0049 Lorenzo Dow's *History of Cosmopolite* Book, placed on rare book shelves; Lorenzo Dow, *History of Cosmopolite*, or the Writings of Rev. Lorenzo Dow containing his experience and travels in Europe and America up to near his fiftieth year, also, his polemic writings, to which is added the "Journey of Life" by Peggy Dow. Cincinnati: 1851. Lorenzo Dow was an unordained itinerant minister who with his wife Peggy Dow traveled throughout the eastern U.S. preaching. He was an abolitionist. Lorenzo and Peggy visited Valley communities and Staunton. After a soaking rain, he preached through the night in Staunton

2014.0050 Tommy Crawford Collection 4 newspapers from 1933, 1942, and 1945 concerning events prior to and during World War II; 6 ration books of



Janie Crawford, Davis Crawford, and Tommy Crawford World War II; AMOCO highway map, Virginia, ca. 1941; digitized photographs of Tommy Crawford and family members

2014.0051 Lizzie E. Snider Photograph Album A post-Civil War photograph album with 20 cartes de visite, 9 tintypes, most of which are unidentified but by Staunton photographers. Album inscribed "Lizzie E. Snider." Persons identified are Hannah Snider, Oliver D. Daugherty, and Drucilla Denney.

2014.0052 J.B. Yount Swannanoa Books Books, Victoria Airsun Wonderli, *Centennial pictorial history of Swannanoa mansion, 1912-2012*, and Glenn Clark, *The Man Who Tapped the Secrets of the Universe (biography of Walter Russell)*

2014.0053 Rockbridge County Images of America Book Book, photographs of Michael Miley depicting Rockbridge County. Published in Images of America series of historic photograph books.

2014.0054 Virginia History Books A collection of 8 books including reprints of 1885 Hammond atlases of the Shenandoah Valley counties of Frederick, Shenandoah, and Page; 4 books on the American Revolution including a scholarly analysis of the Augusta Resolves; George Morgan's Patrick Henry biography; Brent Tarter's *The Grandees of Government*; Cornelius Ryan's *The Longest Day*, which tells the story of the landings at Omaha Beach on D-Day, 1944, including references the 29th Infantry Brigade and to 5 residents of Staunton who were in the first wave of Americans to land

2014.0055 Marianne Bonatakis Arithmetic Text book, 1888 school text for common schools and academies; inscribed "Ernest G. Mix, Staunton, Virginia"

2014.0056 George Caleb Bingham Illustrated Article Magazine, *American Art Review*, October 2014 with article by Margaret C. Conrads, "George Caleb Bingham and the River;" illustrated with Bingham's paintings, sketches, and self-portrait; Bingham was a famous nineteenth-century genre painter who was born in Augusta County near Grottoes.



Index

Symbols

116th Brigade Museum 202
1st Virginia Volunteer Infantry
Regiment 7

A

Acquisitions, Augusta County Historical Society 201, 203, 206
Adams, Henry 192; John 190; Marion Hooper "Clover" 193; Richard 53; Samuel 199
African American Boy Scout Troop 84
African American history of Staunton 76
African American schools in Staunton 77
After Hours Video store 42, 45
Afton Mountain 19
Afton Mountain Top Hotel 23
Alcott, Bronson 199
Alexandria, Va. 81
Ambassadors Club 84
An American Life 197
American Quilters Society 156
American Revolution 189
American Safety Razor 86
America's Forgotten Caste 206
Amherst Court House 74
Amnesty Oath 17
Anderson, Richard 158
Appalachian Heart: Oral Histories of the Mountain Elders 184
Appomattox 177
Appomattox Court House 74
Archinal, Rosemarye Johnson 206
Arithmetic Text 208
Armistead, Mary 58; R. M., Mrs. 55
Art Club of Richmond 22, 26
Art Deco 80
Astor, Nancy 30
Atkinson, Benjamin M. 22; Lucy 22; Lucy Emma May 23
Atlantic Cable Company 104
Augusta Clothing Hall 92
Augusta County 4, 7, 8, 13, 18, 77, 83, 144, 172, 177

Augusta County: Images of America 172, 204
Augusta County Court Martial Book 203
Augusta County Genealogical Society Newspaper Collection 202
Augusta County Historical Society 53, 54, 202, 205
Augusta Female Seminary 202
Augusta Fruit and Produce 107, 108, 109
Augusta Juvenile and Domestic Relations District Court 97
Augusta Military Academy 116; barracks 124; farm 126; museum 126, 130; parade ground 131; report card 131; stationery 129; uniforms 119
Augusta Parish Church 61
Augusta Seminary Annual 202
Augusta Volunteers 7

B

Backcountry newsletter 205
Baden-Powell, Robert 63
Ballard, Virginia Hogshead 207
Bankhead, Tallulah 53, 58, 67
Barfield, Rodney 187, 206
Barkman, W. H. 108
Barth Clothing Store 92
Barth, Johanna 93; Joseph 93; Joseph L. 92; Madeline 108; Simon 92
Basic Furniture 105
Baskervill, Henry Eugene 25
Beauregard, Pierre 15
Bechtel, Laten 83
Beigie, Jacqui 156
Bell, Richard Phillips III 54, 58; S. M. Davidson 206
Bellefont / Bellefonte 143, 144, 153
Bent Mountain School 80
Berg, Andrew Scott 186
Berlin, Edward P. 58
Beverley Manor 144
Beverley Street 112
Beverley Theater 108
Beverley, William 144



Beyer, Edward 207
Bingham, George Caleb 206, 208
Blaine, James G. 38
Block, Herbert 38
Blue Ridge Tunnel 175
The Blue Ridge Tunnel: A Remarkable Engineering Feat in Antebellum Virginia 175
Bluestocking 105
Bonatakis, Marianne 208
Book Reviews 166
Booker T. Washington Community Center 78
Booker T. Washington High School 76, 79, 83, 88; auditorium/gymnasium 82; library 86
Boone, Daniel 172
Booth, John Wilkes 70
Bosserman, Christian Robert 204; David 204; Sarah Hemp 204
Bosserman Family Photographs 204
Bowman, Rex 180
Braddock, General 168
Brandon Plantation 22
Breckenridge family 203
Brice, Marshall 55, 58
Brockman, Adelaide 58; William 58
Brown, John 12, 182; Katharine 2; Nancy Elder 30
Brown, Katharine L. Collection 203
Brown v. Board of Education Supreme Court decision 87
Buchanan family 203
Buffalo Bill 179
Bull Run, Battle of 1, 171
The Bully Pulpit: Theodore Roosevelt, William Howard Taft and the Golden Age of Journalism 196
Bunker Hill 198
Bunker Hill: A City, A Siege, A Revolution. 198
Burdette, John 176
Burke, W. S. 103
Burkes, Helen 85
Burwell, C.W. 202
Bushman, Katherine 57, 58; William 58
Buzzelli, Matthew 43
Byrd, Harry F. 207

C

Calhoun, Mary 150
Cambria, Paul 43
Cameron, Donald 193; Elizabeth 193
Campbell County 201
Campbell County Historical Society 201
Campbell, Harold 184; Lila Lee Wilson 184
Capehart, H. 72
Carries Rest 23
Cedar Creek, Battle of 6, 177
Centennial pictorial history of Swannanoa mansion, 1912-2012 208
Charlottesville, Va. 74
Chesapeake & Ohio Railroad 22
Chickasaw Nation 10
Choctaw Indians 10
Chodrow, Ruth 91
Citizens Gas Company. 106
Civil Rights movement of the 1960s 77
Civil War 69, 170, 172, 179, 181, 188
Civil Works Administration 78, 192
Clark, Glenn 208
Clay, Henry 206
Clem, Silva E. 58
Cleveland, Grover 38
Cleveland Public Library 87
Cochran Judicial Center 110
Coffey, Lynn 184
Cohen, Louis 105, 106, 107; Maurice 108; Minnie (Minnie Switzer) 105, 107; Morris (Maurice) 107; Walter E. 107
Cohen's Restaurant 106, 107
Collett, Isaac 3
Collins Collection of Architectural Drawings 105
Collins, T. J. 105, 110
Colored Parent-Teachers Association 87
Committee on Public Grounds and Buildings 110
Community Foundation of the Central Blue Ridge 76
Community League of the Colored Schools 78
Comstock, Gloria Craft 156
Concord, Massachusetts 199



Conformable to the Doctrine and Discipline: A History of Trinity Church Augusta Parish, Staunton, Virginia, 1746-1996, 203
Conrads, Margaret C. 208
Continental Army 190
Coolidge, Calvin 32
Cosmetology Club 204
Cowan, Martha Burnside Stephens 156
Cowell, Mark 143, 145, 153
Craigs ville/Fordwick Parade 203
Crawford, Tommy 207
Crawfords Barber Shop 204
Crompton-Shenandoah Company 165
Crosby, Aaron 59
Crowell and Sachs Company 96
Crowl, R. M. 206
Crozet, Claudius 175
Culbertson, Charles 178, 206
Custer, George Armstrong 70, 73, 194
Custer, Sitting Bull, and the Battle of the Little Big Horn 194

D

Dailey, Dale 204
Daily News Leader 40, 144, 170, 178
Daily-Snell Genealogy 204
Dalhouse, George D. 30
Dalton, Robert E. 80
Darroch, Matt 35
Daugherty, Oliver D. 208
Daughters of the American Revolution 23
Davis, Jefferson 188; William 167
Day, Thomas 186
DeJarnette, E. H., Jr 207
Dem Good Ole Times 23
Denney, Drucilla 208
Devin, Thomas 72
Digges, Edward 22
Dilworth, Richard H. 143
Dinwiddie County 81
Dixie Theatre, Staunton 111
Dooley, James Henry 19; John 22;
Sarah ("Sallie") O. May 19, 22
Douglas, Stephen A. 179
Dovel, Barbara Yount 156, 159
Dow, Lorenzo 207; Peggy 207

Drawing Flak 40
Dulaney, A. T. 32; James F., Jr 32
Dunmore, Governor 60
Dunnings, Todd 46, 50
Dunsmore Business School 115
Dykstra, Natalie 193

E

Early, Jubal 69, 73, 177
The Echo 86
Echols, John 71
Edgemont Orchards Apple Barrel Label 206
Edison, Thomas 66
Eisenhower, Dwight D. 172, 179
Eisenhower jacket 119
Elder, Anna Fitzhugh May 23;
Fitzhugh 23; Fitzhugh Jr. 30, 54, 58; Florence 30
Ellis, Joseph J. 189; Ree 26
Emerson, Ralph Waldo 199
Ever Forward 203

F

Falling Waters, Battle of 15
Federal Emergency Relief Administration 192
Ferguson, Willie 42
Fifer, H. R. 127
Fillmore, Millard 10
Firestone, Harvey 66
Fisher, Lewis 151, 153
Ford, Henry 53, 59, 65, 67
Fort Defiance, Va. 6
Fort Duquesne 168
Fort Lewis (Bellefont/Bellefonte) 143, 146, 149, 202
Fort Warren 71
Fort Washita 11
Franklin, Benjamin 36
Franklin County Repository 3, 170
Frazier Associates 76
Free Blacks in Antebellum Virginia and North Carolina 172, 187, 190
French and Indian War 168
Frontier Culture Museum newsletter 205



Fuller, Margaret 199
Fulton, Witz, & Co. 103
Future Business Leaders of America 86

G

Games, Henry 193
Gannett newspaper chain 40
Garden, Mary Catherine 204
Geiger, Vincent 9
General Advertiser 170
General Electric 86
General Militia 15
George Washington High School 81
Georgetown College 22
Gibbs, Alfred 74
Girl Scouts of America 63
Glassie, Henry 145
Glen Allen. 6
Glover, John 189
Golay, Michael 192
Golden Eagles 84
Golden Gala Celebration 59, 205
Goodwin, Doris Kearns 195
Gordon-Reed, Annette 169
Grahams Illustrated Magazine 207
Grand Rally of the Whigs of Augusta
 Handbill 206
*Grandeas of Government Cornelius
 Ryans The Longest Day* 208
Granite, Marble and Bronze 151
Grant, Ulysses S. 69
Great Wagon Road 166
Griffith, Andrew Vincent 114, 137;
 Nan Strother Reed Haley 114;
 Nancy Gertrude 114
Gypsy Hill Park 45, 151
Gypsy Hill Park swimming pool
 excavation 202

H

Hale, John 53, 204
Hall, John 58
Hamrick, Richard M. 57, 58
Hanger, Agnes Virginia Roberts
 Hogshead 207
Hardy parking lot 112
Harmon, John A. 145

Harper, Charlie 3; Eleanor Colhoun
 1, 4; George Kenton 10, 170;
 Kenton 1, 3, 4, 7, 9, 12, 13, 14,
 16, 170

Harpers Ferry 13, 14, 171
Harpers Weekly 37
Harrison Advocate 6
Harrison, Benjamin 60
Harrison, Nathaniel 22; William
 Henry 6
Hart, Alexander 100, 101
Hawthorne, Nathaniel 199
Hayes, Richard K. 206
Heller, Fannie 101; Heiman 101;
 Moritz 101
Hemings, Sally 168
Henry, Patrick 53, 59, 60, 67, 208
Herr family house 202
Hevener, Henry ("Harry") 145, 148
Hewitt, Robert R. 205
Hibbard, Billy 205
Hickok, Lorena 191
Highland County 77
The Highland Recorder 202
Hilb and Loeb 100
Hildebrand, Benjamin Franklin 188;
 Catharine 188; Gideon Peter 188;
 J. R. 53, 58; Jacob R. 188; John R.
 189; Mary Susan, 188; Michael
 Conrad 188
Hirsh, Gabriel 103; Mason 103
(G.) Hirsh and Co. 104
Historic Homes of Northern Virginia 147
Historic Staunton Foundation 105
History of Cosmopolite 207
*History of the Augusta County Ameri-
 can Red Cross, 1917-1918* 202
Hitchcock, Alfred 59
Hitler, Adolph 39
Hodges, O. Dayton, Mrs 58
Hoffman, Jean 58
Hoge, Arista 206
Hogshead, Charles 202
Hogshead Compass and Chain 202
Hogsheads Drug Store 66
Holsopple, Brian 59
Holt, Charles 104
Hopkins, Harry 191



Houston and Montgomery families 203
Howe, William 189, 205
(Thomas D.) Howie Armory museum 202
Huffman, William 58
Hunt, Richard Morris 26
Hunter, David 181, 182, 188

I

Ikhnaton 36
Imboden, John 13
Indian Territory 10
The Internal Enemy: Slavery and War in Virginia, 1772-1832 173
Irish 175
Italian Garden (Swannanoa) 24

J

Jackson, Andrew 172; Thomas
Jonathan "Stonewall" 14, 181
James River Canal 70, 72
Jefferson Davis Monument 26
Jefferson Memorial 169
Jefferson, Thomas 7, 60, 168, 172,
174, 179
Jeffries, Thomas Tabb III 1, 170, 204
Jemison, T. J. 84
Jewish merchants in Staunton 91
Jim Crow segregation 87
John Marshall highway 207
Johnny Appleseed: The Story of a Legend 203
Johnston, Joseph E. 14; Karen Lynne 91
Jolly Flatboatmen Poster 206
Jones, Peter 22
Jouett, Jack 61
Jumbo Day, Staunton Fire Department
202
Junkin, George 182

K

Kalorama Street 92
Kate Smith: A Biography 206
Keller, Kenneth W. 201
Kenton Harper of Virginia: Editor, Citizen, Soldier 1, 204
Kercyewsky, Joseph 207

Kerr, Beirne J. 55, 58
Key, Francis Scott 173
King George II 144
King, Martin Luther 85
King Tutankhamen 36
Klines Mills 72
Klotz, Amos 97, 98; Elie (Alex) 98;
Jacob 97, 98, 99, 111; Mildred
111; Morris 98, 99
Klotz Brothers 97, 98, 99
Kronsberg, Abram 92

L

Labor, Earl 198
Lacy Springs, 72
(Robert E.) Lee High School 204, 207
Lee, Fitzhugh 71; Richard Henry 60;
Robert E. 14, 70, 172, 181
Lee-Jackson Highway 207
Leech, John 35
Lehigh Portland Cement Plant 203
Letcher, John 14, 177
Levy dry goods 100
Levy, Leonora 100
Lewis, Andrew 150, 151, 152, 154;
Charles 154; Florence Dooley 23;
John 143, 149, 150, 152;
Margaret Lynn 144, 146, 151;
Maria 178; Samuel 151; Thomas
143, 154; William 151, 154
John Lewis family 143
John Lewis Society 152
Lewis homestead 143, 146, 147
Lewis, John, grave 150; highway 153;
memorial association 151; statue
152
Lewis Street post office 202
Lexington Gazette 181
Lexington, Virginia 181
Life along the South River 207
Lindbergh, Charles 53, 59, 61, 62,
67
The Lives of Margaret Fuller 200
Lodge, Henry Cabot 193
Loeb, Adolph 96; Ferdinand 100;
Julius 96; William 101
(A.) Loeb & Co 96



Loeb Brothers Dry Goods Store 101
Lomas, (alleged Confederate spy) 71
London, Jack 196
Long, John S. 73; Raymond V. 77, 80
Lost Cause 23
Loth, Ann 58; Carter, Mrs. 55
Louisiana Purchase, 7
Love, Virginia 184; David 39
Low, Juliette Gordon 53, 62, 67
Lowenbeck, Moritz 101
Lunenburg County 21
Luther, Martin 36
Lynchburg 72, 74
Lyons, Mary E. 175

M

Madrid, Augusta County 155
*The Man Who Tapped the Secrets of
the Universe* (biography of Walter
Russell) 208
Manassas, First Battle of 16
Maple Manse (Augusta County) 155
Market Street, Staunton 112
Marquis building 105
Mary Baldwin College 166, 207
Maryland Casualty Company 115
Matteson, John 200
Maury, Matthew Fontaine 177
Mauzy, Richard 13
May, Henry 22; Julia Jones 22
Maymont (Richmond) 20, 21, 29
Maymont Foundation 21
McAllister, Bobby 59
McCleary, Ann 201
McCleskey, Turk 166
McCloskey, James M. 35, 39, 40, 42, 44,
45, 46, 48, 206
McClures Magazine 195
McCormick Reaper 205
McCulloch, Robert 144
McDowell, Irvin 15
Melton, Hugh 64
*A Memoir of the Last Year of the War
for Independence* 75
Menk, Patricia 55, 58
A Mennonite Journal 1862-1865 188
Mennonites (in the Civil War in
Virginia) 188

Merritt, Wesley 71
Métraux, Daniel A. 69, 166
Mexican War 7, 8, 170, 171
Michael Koiner Memorial Association
158, 160
Middle River 144, 145
Middlebrook Avenue, Staunton 108
Miley, Michael 176, 208
The Military History of Ohio 204
Military Records of Augusta Indian
captives 203
Mill Street Grill 104
Millboro, Bath County 71
Millboro Springs Presbyterian Church
202
Minor, Robert 38
Mix, Ernest G. 208; Paul 102
Moffett, George 61; Sarah 61
Monroe, Jennifer Wood 53, 57
Montgomery, Hugh 168
Monticello 169
Moore, Robert H. II 183
Moravians 166
Morgan, George 208
Morrow, Anne 62
Moses, Will 203
Mossy Creek Academy 207
Mount Pleasant 61
Mt. Crawford 72
Mt. Zion Baptist Church 84
Museum of American Frontier Culture
205

N

N.Y. Clothing House 96
Nash, Harry 55; Harry L., 58
Nast, Thomas 37
Nelson County 184
Nelson, Thomas, Jr 60
Neuman & Co 28
New Theatre Building 110
News Virginian 39
Nielsen Construction 81
Nielsen, J.C. 202
Noland & Baskervill 25
Noland, William Churchill 25
Norfolk Journal 17
Norman, Edward Craig 202



North River Area Schools 203
Nutt, Joe 144, 149

O

Oberdorfer, Bernard 96
Old Presbyterian Cemetery,
Waynesboro 206
Oliphant, Pat 38
Olivier, Fielding 110
Opera House, Staunton 108
Operation Desert Shield 204
Opie, E. Walton 55, 58
Orange County 144
Onuf, Peter S. 169

P

Palais Royale 96
Palmer, Adam 206; Larry Trenton 206
Pangburn, Gerould 204
Parrish Collection 202
Patch, Alexander 205
Patterson, D. W. 144, 148; Robert 14
Pearl, Daniel 47, 49
Peebles, John Kevan 26
Peelings, Mitch 46, 50
Pelham, Henry 37
Pendleton, William 15
Pennington, A. C. M. 73
Pennsylvanian Gazette 36
Perry, Elizabeth H. 55, 58
Personal Memoirs of P. H. Sheridan 70
Petersburg plantation 22
Peyton, John Howe 8
Philbrick, Nathaniel 194, 198
Pierce, Franklin 11, 179
Point Pleasant, Battle of 154
Polk, James K. 7, 9, 12, 206
Porn Man 44
Powers, Karen 156
Preston and Brown family letters 203
Preston, John Thomas Lewis 182
Price, Robert 183
Punch Magazine 35
Pythian Sisters 207

Q

Quilt Pattern, Basket 159; Bow Tie 163;
Carolina Lily 159; Crazy Quilt
160; Diamond in Squares 160;
Double Irish Chain 162; Dove in a
Window 160; Eight Point Star-
Block 159; Four Patch Triangle
164; Grandmother's Fan 160;
Kansas 163; Ocean Waves
162, 163; One Patch 165; Princess
Feather 159; T Block 163; Thou-
sand Pyramids 165

R

Renfrew, (alleged Confederate spy) 71
Republican Farmer 3, 170
Revere, Paul 37
*Revolutionary Summer: The Birth of
American Independence* 189
Reynolds, William W. 206
Richardson, H. H. 193
Richmond 20
Richmond & Danville Railroad 22
Richmond Times-Dispatch 202
Ritter, Ben 207
Riverheads Township 202
Roanoke County 80
The Roanoke Times 202
Robertson, Ray 42, 44
Rockbridge County 208
*Rockbridge County: Images of America
Book* 208
Rockbridge Historical Society 55
Rockfish Gap 23, 73, 175
Rockingham County 157, 176
Rogers, Edgerton 25; Virginia 58
Roller, C. S. 137; Charles 116; Thomas
116, 117
Roller house 126
Romanelli, Rafael 28
Roosevelt, Eleanor 190, 191; Franklin
78; Theodore 195
Rosen, Fred 202
Rosser, Thomas 70, 71, 72
*Rot, Riot and Rebellion: Mr. Jefferson's
Struggle to Save the University
That Changed America* 180



Royal Orchard 24
Ruedy, Ralph H. 168
Russell, Lao 32; Walter 32
Rustic Bridge (Swannanoa) 31

S

Sachs, Sy (Simon) 96
Sadler, Mary Harding 25
Samuel Shultz Shoes 96
Santos, Carlos 180
Sarnelle, Dean and Irene 207
Schulz, Charles 47, 48
Scott, Frederic W. 24, 25; Winfield 7
Seaboard Air Line Railroad 22
September 11, 2001 47
Shenandoah Pizza 105
Shenandoah River 72
Shenandoah Valley 3, 23, 69
Sheridan, Philip 69, 177, 188, 194
Sherman, William T. 72
Shirkey, Alan 206
Shuey, Theodore, Jr 203
Shultz, Albert 96, 110; Samuel 96
Shute, Thomas 167
Simmons, J. Susanne 166, 203
Sirkin, Louie 43
Skyline-Swannanoa Corporation 32
slavery 12, 172, 173, 174, 187
Sloss Sheffield Iron and Steel Company 22
(R.R.) Smith Center for History and Art 58
Smith, Joseph 30; Kate 53, 59, 64, 67
Smithey and Boynton 83
Snider, Hannah 208; Lizzie E. 208
Society of Colonial Dames 23
Sorrells, Nancy Taylor 156, 172, 173, 203, 204
Southern Association of Colleges and Secondary Schools 85
Southside Railroad 74
The Southwest Times 202
Spencer, Samuel 55; Samuel R., Jr. 58
The Spirit of St. Louis 62
Spotsylvania County 144
Sproul, Hugh B. 207
St. James Protestant Episcopal Church 25

Stable (Swannanoa) 31
Stanton, Edwin 71; Lucia 169
Star Theatre 207
State Superintendent of School Buildings Construction 83
Statler Brothers 179
Staunton 4, 8, 18, 72, 76, 83, 91, 144, 170
Staunton Academy 202
Staunton Daily News Leader 202, 203
Staunton Dispatch 105
Staunton Gazette 3
Staunton Military Academy 203
Staunton Militia Company 7
Staunton Mirror 203
Staunton School Board 77
Staunton Spectator 5, 104, 170
Staunton Spectator and General Advertiser 4, 6, 13, 17
The Staunton, Virginia, Anthology 178, 206
Staunton Vindicator 17
Staunton, Virginia: A Treasury of Historic Tales 178, 206
Steigle, Bettie Yount 156
Stephens, Mary Dovel 156, 158; Laura Belle 156, 161; Martha Burnside 158, 162; Martha Josephine 156, 158, 162; Mary Elizabeth Dovel 16; Richard Anderson 162
Stonewall Brigade Band 105
Stonewall Cottage (Rockingham County) 156, 157
Stonewall Jackson Camp 202
Stonewall Jackson Hotel and Conference Center 53, 96
Straight, Tracy 46, 50
Strauss, Lamartine G. 92, 93
Straw, Richard A. 176
Stribling Springs 207
Stuart, Alexander H. H. 4, 171, 181
Stuart Hall 207
Sullivan, Gilbert J. 206
Summerfield, Anne Davison 96; Melanie 96
Sunday, Billy 179
Sunnyside-McKinney School 81
Surratt, L. H. 203



swan bed 29
Swannanoa 19
Switzer, Abraham 104; Babette 104;
Charles F. 97; D.L. 105; David
97, 107; David L. 104
Switzer jewelry shop 106
Swoope Depot 73

T

Taft, William Howard 195
Talbott, Sherry 59
Tammany Hall 38
Tams, William Purviance 54, 55
Tarr, Edward 166, 167
Tarter, Brent 208
Taylor, Alan 173, 174; John A., Jr.
119, 124, 126, 131, 207; John
Alvin, Sr 115; Nancy (Mrs. John
A.) 118; Vernon 121; Zachary 7, 8
Temple Beth Ahabah 25
Temple House of Israel 92, 93, 100, 112
Thompson, Park 145, 146; Sandra 145
Thoreau, Henry David 199
Thornrose Cemetery 18
Tiffany Studios 27
Timber Ridge, Rockbridge County 167
Timber Ridge Presbyterian Church 167
Tinkling Spring: Headwater of Free-
dom 54
Torbert, Alfred 71
Trimble, Kelly 53, 58
Trinity Episcopal Church 202, 203
Trinity Lutheran Church 160
Turner, Herbert S. 55, 58
Tweed, "Boss" 38

U

U.S. Department of Interior, National
Register of Historic Places 76
United Confederate Veterans 202
Universal Pictures Corporation 110
University of Science and Philosophy 32
University of Virginia 180

V

Vagabonds 66

Valley Campaign, Civil War 69
Valley Virginian 25
Van Buren, Martin 6
Vanderbilt, Cornelius II 26
Veblen, Thorstein 25
Venable, Andrew A., Jr 86
Veterans Bureau 87
VFW Auxiliary 84
Vickers, Jennifer 203; Rosalie 204
Virginia Alpha Delta Kappa banquet
203
The Virginia Architects 1835-1955: A
Biographical Dictionary 80
Virginia Central Railroad 70, 72
Virginia Department of Education, 80
Virginia Department of Historic Re-
sources 76
Virginia Female Institute 63
Virginia General Assembly 12
Virginia Military Institute 176, 181
Virginia Quilt Museum 156
Virginia Registry of Historic Places 76
Virginia School for the Deaf and Blind
102
Virginia Stamp Act Resolutions 60
Virginia State Association of Letter
Carriers 84
Virginia State Beauticians Association
204
Virginia State Capitol 26
Virginia Press Association 40

W

Waddell, Joseph 9; Lyttleton 9
Walker, Hannah 30
Walters, Abraham 97
Walters and Switzer Clothing Store 97
Walters Fruit and Produce Company
108
Walters, Harry 96; Moses 97, 106,
108, 109; Rhea 109
Walters Produce House 107
Wampler, Mack 58
War of 1812 173, 174
Ware, Arthur 84, 88
Warren, Joseph 199
Washington & Lee University 176, 181



Washington, Booker Taliaferro 76;
George 189
Water Tower (Swannanoa) 31
Watering Can Sculpture 43
Wayland, John W. 147
Waynesboro 72
Waynesboro, Battle of 69, 73, 177
Waynesboro Historical Commission 207
Waynesboro Sentinel 206
(D.) Webster Davis School 77
Weinberg, Abraham 92, 93
Weinberg Clothing Company 93
Weinberg, Irving 93; Isaac 110
Wells, John E. 80
Western State Hospital 202
Wharton, Gabriel C. 71
Where the River Flows 205
Wherry Building 202
Whig Party 6, 170
White Star Mills 104, 206
Wilkins, Charles 30
Williams, Richard G. 178, 181
Williamsburg, Battle of 22
(Rita) Wilson Fund 76
Wilson, Aquilla 187; Howard M. 58;
Howard McKnight 53; Richard
Guy 25; Woodrow 172, 185, 186

Wilson Brothers Drug Store 202
Winchester, Virginia 13, 71, 72
Windy Cove Presbyterian Church 202
Witz and Holt Flouring Mill 104
Witz Building 103
Witz Dry Goods 101, 102
(J.L.) Witz Furniture Store 106
Witz, Isaac 101, 104, 105; Julius 103,
105, 110; Leila 103; Rosalie 103
(I.) Witz and Bro. 102
Witz, Lightner, and Co. 103
*Womens Home Companion and Good
Housekeeping* 202
Wonderli, Victoria Airisun 208
Woodrow Wilson Highway 207
Works Progress Administration 85
World War I 97
*World War II American Guidebook:
Staunton* 205

Y

Yellowstone National Park 70
Young, H. K. 71; Henry 71
Yount, Barbara Dovel 156; Hazel 158;
Hazel Alice 156, 164; J. B. III 58,
155, 158, 208; Myrtie Alice
Stephens 156, 158, 160; Violette
Belle 156, 158, 164



AUGUSTA COUNTY HISTORICAL SOCIETY 2014

OFFICERS

President - Linda Petzke
President-Elect - open
Recording Secretary - Michael McCray
Treasurer - Katherine Crow
Archivist - Dr. Ken Keller
Associate Archivist - J. Susanne Simmons
Past President - Nancy Sorrells

DIRECTORS

2014	2015	2016
J. Susanne Simmons	Rick Wimer	Christiana Shields
Irene Sarnelle	Bob Kuykendall	Annie Hulen
	Doug Cochran	Rick Chittum

STANDING COMMITTEES

Augusta Historical Bulletin— Dr. Katharine Brown & Nancy Sorrells, Editors;
Daniel A. Métraux, Associate Editor and Book Review Editor
Archives — Dr. Ken Keller, Archivist; J. Susanne Simmons, Associate Archivist
Newsletter — Lucinda Cooke, Editor
Publicity — Doug Cochran

Office manager: Betty Lewandowski
Office hours: Tues., Thurs., Friday 9 a.m.-noon;
Wed. 9 a.m.-noon (Call first about Wednesday visits)
Other visits by appointment.
Office phone: 540-248-4151
Website: www.augustacountyhs.org
Email: augustachs@ntelos.net
Mailing address: P.O. Box 686, Staunton, VA 24402

Augusta County Historical Society office and research library are located on the third floor of the R.R. Smith Center for History and Art at 20 South New Street, Staunton, VA 24401. A parking garage is located across the street.

For more information about membership information, Society resources, visiting the reserach library, publications for sale, or upcoming events, visit www.augustacountyhs.org



Augusta County Historical Society & Augusta County Genealogical Society Family Heritage Program

The Augusta County Historical Society joins with the Augusta County Genealogical Society to offer with pride a family heritage recognition program for those whose family roots extend to the early years of the county, and who wish to submit their line of descent to complement the growing archives of the two societies.

Three types of membership in Augusta Pioneers are recognized. *First Families* of Augusta County is the membership category for those whose ancestors settled in the county in the period from its founding in 1738 (or before) to the year 1800. *Pioneer Families* of Augusta County is for those whose forbears settled in Augusta County in the nineteenth century, that is between the years 1801 and 1900. *Junior Pioneers* of Augusta County recognizes young people from the cradle to age eighteen who are descendants of First Families or Pioneer Families.

If you believe that you are qualified to be an Augusta Pioneer or if you would also like to enroll young family members—children, grandchildren, nieces and nephews—simply send in the form below to receive the application. Completed applications will be checked and then certified by the societies' boards that you have been accepted for membership in either First Families of Augusta County, Pioneer Families of Augusta County, or Junior Pioneers of Augusta County. The application genealogy files become a part of the archives of the Augusta County Historical Society and the Augusta County Genealogical Society and will be made available to family researchers.

All members will receive a handsome matted certificate of membership, suitable for framing. Membership in Augusta Pioneers is a one-time recognition that lasts a lifetime. Once the initial application fee is paid, there are no annual dues assessed. The fee for membership in Augusta Pioneers is a flat \$50 for descent from one ancestor. Additional ancestors may be added for \$20 each. The junior member enrollment fee is \$20. Upon reaching the age of eighteen, junior members can elect to pay the additional \$30 to become full-fledged members.

____ Yes! I am interested in becoming a member of the Augusta County Family Heritage Program Please send the official application form and instructions for its completion to:

Name _____
Street _____
City _____ State _____
Zip _____
Phone _____
e-mail _____

*Please note that you may also print this same form from our website **www.augustacountyhs.org***

***Mail the form to: Augusta County Historical Society, Attn.:
Family Heritage Program, P.O. Box 686, Staunton, VA 24402-0686
-220-



